



VIRGO
MY FIRST LOVE

BASED ON TRUE LIFE
EVENTS

DWAA NATION
PRECIOUS MOLOI

VIRGO

PROLOGUE

A FEW YEARS AGO

15 minutes away from my house, we have a public pool where you pay R5 to go in. It's mostly infested with kids from around the neighborhood and kids from other neighborhoods too. It's always full, especially on weekends...

It was a hot Saturday afternoon when my friends and I decided to make the trip. I love swimming, even though I don't know how to swim. It's two pools, one is very deep and one accommodates people like me who don't know how to swim..

I am 13 years old, turned 13 about two months ago but my body has developed in a way that you'd swear I was older. Puberty at it's worst and genes!. I have breasts bigger than kids my age. I had my first period when I was 12, which was last year in primary school. Friends I had at primary their Parents told them to stay away from me. I have big breasts, started getting my periods and now I'll be frequent with sex and they don't want that kind of influence near their kids..

I don't wanna mention the pimples that I have now, since I have a fair skin tone. They have left my face with dark marks that I can't get rid off. My face is also oily, in a hot day like this. My face gets shinny and it's a drag because then at school I'll get teased. One of my classmates went as far as saying "They could fry eggs on my face". It's emotionally and mentally draining to go to school now.

I am always bullied, called all sorts of names. I get to be the joke of the day, and it doesn't help having beautiful friends because I become the drag in the

squad. Even my own friends make fun of me.. One of them once denied any friendship with me when asked if I was her friend, she replied by saying "No it's a classmate that chills with us during luncbreaks", my heart shattered that day..

I thought primary was the worst, but high school is the devil's territory. I am in grade 8, and I already hate high school. My class is malicious, the girls in my class are wicked, they go against me all the time. I was close to maybe 3 girls in class, but when they saw the other girls making fun of me. They ditched me and joined the mean squad, which saw me as a loner. I don't associate myself with them, mostly spend my time at the library if we have a free period or during lunchtime after finishing my food I go and chill there..

Going to the pool today I was with a couple of my classmates. We planned this trip at school as classmates about a week ago, to all meet here. Both

girls and guys.. Not everyone showed up, I can say 75% of the class showed up....

If I knew what awaited me, I wouldn't have come. I would've stayed at home.. Right after changing into my swimming costume, and making it out to the swimming pool. My classmates decided to gang up on me. Surrounded me and started making fun of me... Lucky took the lead..

Lucky: Ehh s cefe my first time seeing you in a swimming costume

That's the nickname they gave me "S cefe", meaning "Annoyance/irritation".

Lucky: Yazi you could've worn a tracksuit, I didn't know you were a zebra. Some parts are black, some parts are light

They laughed..

This guy throws shade, he knows how to throw shade. Even in class..

Lucky: Bengithi umzimba wakho mubi ku uniform k'phela, ku swimming costume uWorse (I thought your body was ugly only in a school uniform, but you worse in a swimming costume)

Laughter filled the place..

Lucky: You not even shapeless, you are within! That means instead of your curves coming out they are within

He laughed and clapped his hands..

Lucky: When they say life is unfair, they meant you.
You are not ugly S cefe, you are unfair

I looked at everyone laughing and enjoying what he was doing..

Lucky: Yabona if you could get married one day,
that means the guy can survive and win fear factor

The laughter that was going around even made me dizzy, it was a lot of people..

Lucky: Uthi you are 13 years old, but iDairy ithi I
have 5 kids already! iWinds creen ithi black label!

I swallowed as I felt tears nearing...

Lucky: I heard that you have a crush on one of my

friends

He looked at his friend..

Lucky: Ntwana noma sebathi udakiwe mara la..

Gevaar (even if they say you drunk but here danger!)

The friend chuckled and shook his head..

Guy1: Do yourself and everyone a favour, vele
suicide yourself! Umubi s cefe you would even scare
a scarecrow

They laughed really loud, tears streamed down..

I am what I am, I never asked to be like this. If I had
in me to change how I look, I would. I would've long
changed myself to look like how they want me to

look. I hate going through this everyday of my life, being told I'm ugly. Shapeless and have big breasts.

This bullying has been going on for years, dating back from primary. For how long will I go through this? It kills my self esteem everyday. Makes me wanna die or cutt off every part of my body that makes me the victim of bullying.. I wish I was thin or attractively thick so I can be considered "Beautiful". I wish my breasts were smaller, I wish my skin tone was not two toned. I wish my face was smooth and clean from all these pimples. I hate myself, and I hate my existence..

Walking away from them, from the crowd. I bumped into one classmate that pushed me to the next..

Him: Hai voets ek wena!

The other one pushed me to the next, and just like

that I was a ball. Being thrown around to the next and the next, until one pushed me I fell right into the pool where the water was deep..

My Name is Aisha "Sontozile" Ngwenya, and this is my story.

.

To be counted

Just a taste of what's to come

01

AISHA

[A FEW YEARS LATER]

My hands were trembling as I held the envelope. I could feel my heartbeat in my throat, knees weak as

anxiety took over.

This moment right here, is what I lost sleep over as I prepared for my final matric exams 3 years ago. I am 22 years old now and according to the educational system. I should've been in varsity right after completing my matric, but then unfortunately I didn't have funding. I live with my Mother and my Big Sister. My Mother is unemployed, only my Sister is working and her job is also not impressive. Her salary is 2.5k, deduct transportation money from there, money for her to buy necessities and also to keep food on the table for us. She doesn't complain when it comes to providing for us, but I feel for her.

She's carrying a lot on her shoulders, and I want nothing more than to relieve her. Hence why I channeled all my pain to my books. My education was the only tool I had, one thing that no one could never take away from me. I did well in matric, got 3 distinctions. In English, Life sciences, and

Mathematics. All I needed was funding that's all, and since from then it's been difficult to get a bursary. Until the department of health extended a helping hand and all that has been needed, and outstanding. Is the acceptance letter. The letter came today, I'm not even sure if they took me or not..

Ma: Vula phela Sontoki (open it)

Me: I'm scared Ma

Ma: Aww manje uma wena ungeke ukwazi ukuyifunda, sofundelwa ubani? (if you can't read it, who's going to read for us)

My mother is partially educated. She never finished school, worked at some restaurant until the restaurant closed down and since from then she has been unemployed..

She is the major reason why I'm here today, still

breathing. With all the bullying and everything, she was always there for me everyday telling me how much she loved me. How beautiful I am, that it doesn't matter who says what. I am God's creation, and if God wasn't happy with me. He wouldn't have created me..

My years of being bullied turned me into an introvert. The girl that stayed indoors 90% of the time. Only went out if I had to go to school, town, church, or the shop. I only have one friend, my best friend that I grew up with.

She's a year older than me...

I opened the envelope and got the letter out, I got more nervous..

Me: God please.. I need this (whispering)

I read through with my hands still shaking.

Me: "We are pleased to inform you that you have been accepted to the Bachelor of Dental Therapy program, at the Sefako Makgatho university.."

I didn't read any further, started screaming and jumping up and down..

Me: I got in!! I got in!! I got in!!

My mom joined her hands together and closed her eyes, then she looked up at the ceiling and started saying a prayer with her lips trembling... Most Parents shed tears because their children are bothering them, to see my Mother shedding tears because she was proud. Validated to me that indeed I deserve these blessings..

I am not holding myself on a high pedestal, but I have always respected my Mother. Before my best

friend that I grew up with, my Mother has always been my first best friend. She has always been there for me, motivating me, loving me unconditionally when no one else couldn't. Her love got me through a lot, I remember when she was scared that I would commit suicide because of what I was going through. The depression, the mental breakdown. To save what was left of my sanity, I channeled that pain into my books. I became a bookworm and actually was always on top of my class..

She held my hand..

Ma: Buya, let's go and pray.. Thank the Lord

VIRGO SWARTBOOI

I was in my bedroom playing a game "Player unknown's battleground" abbreviated to "PUBG". It's

an online game where you play with other people, even Americans. It's no different from the movie "Hunger Games".

We fighting for survival..

Me: Okay guys.. I need an Emo!! I am going to die!!
Someone please cover me!

My door opened, My Mother walked in.

Ma: Can we talk?

I ignored her..

Ma: Ludwe!!

Me: Nombomi I'm still playing, can't fucken pause

the game! It's an online game

Ma: Eyy I need to talk to you now!

I took off my earphones and looked at her.

Me: What?

Ma: The letter from the university came through

I looked at the letter in her hand, she had already opened it..

Me: Ke Ngoku? (what now)

Ma: Ungenile (you were accepted)

I shrugged my shoulders..

Ma: You were accepted to the..

She looked at the letter..

Ma: To do Bachelor of Dental therapy, do you know what it's about?

Me: No and I don't care

Ma: Lu-

Me: Virgo! It's Virgo!

Ma: LUDWE!!! I thought you have secured a spot in "Bachelor of Dental Surgery"

Me: Andiyikhathalelanga nalento yase Varsity ubona nje! (I don't even care about Varsity)

Ma: Xa kutheni Ludwe? (Why)

Me: You want me to go to Varsity, I don't!

Ma: Because I want you to do something constructive with your life! You are 24 years old! I had to even go through channels of bribing to make sure that you pass your matric well!

Me: Who asked you too? Plus it's not like you were doing something that you've never done before, since when do you have a conscience? You were a whore once! this is your style!

She kept quiet and looked at me, I exhaled..

Me: Bomi

Ma: Congratulations.. Tomorrow I'm going to pay the registration fee, then you'll go and register

Me: I didn't mean it like that

She placed the letter on the my bed and walked out.. I took it and read it..

One would call me an ungrateful dis respectful spoilt brat, and yes that I am.

The thing is, my Mother messed up. Her messing up resulted to my being born. I am a product of a one night stand, and I only heard that from my Grandmother. She wasn't saying it as an insult, she was just telling me how I came about.. My Mother was wilding back in Varsity, a beautiful yellow bone Xhosa girl from the slumbs of Eastern Cape, moving down to Gauteng to study. She sure did not only concentrate on her books but also used her beauty to get guys with loaded wallets and flashy cars. She

was basically a whore, that lived through abortions I was the only child who survived abortion. Only because she found out late, my Grandmother had noticed when she went home for holidays. I heard she wanted to abort me or give me up, but my Grandmother convinced her otherwise. From when I was born to the age of 9, I was raised by my Grandmother, my own mother didn't want me. When my Grandmother passed on, I had to move down here to live with Nobomi. Ever since from then, we've always had a rocky relationship..

I was in a private school, an all boys private school. Do you know how difficult going through life with all your friends having both Parents? Their fathers fetching them from school and I had my Mother or the driver picking me up? Not having my Father attend any of my rugby games, and my Mother was always too busy to attend. When the game was over, I'd had to fit myself in a family so I don't stand out that my Parents never attended, I did that everytime when we went out for burgers after the game. The

only father figure I had was her husband's best friend. Their child was my best friend, until my Mother fucked her husband's best friend and everything collapsed. Their kid bashed me at school because of what my Mother did, and I would fight anyone who said anything about my Mother which led to me being suspended and I was dropped from my favorite sport because I had anger issues and I was very aggressive..

So tell me how do I respect such a woman? A woman who doesn't even know who my Father is?. Yes she made something of her life, got into agriculture has a farm back at home. She used my Grandmother's land, demolished my last memory of a warm home for a farm that is really doing well.

We have the money, a good home and a very good life. I get everything I want but where is the love? All those things don't matter when there's so much pain running deep in our hearts.. My Grandmother

was the only Person I knew as my Mother, Nobomi was just a surrogate and deep down I resent her..

.

To be continued

02

AISHA

I have never been this happy in my life before. Someone like me from humble beginnings, beating all odds and going to a med school? A lot of people spoke. Many said at home we weren't financial stable enough for me to go to varsity, in my hood. People said all kinds of things, including that girls who stay indoors too much. End up falling pregnant in secret, a lot was spoken. That could've made me not believe in myself, but because the God I serve is greater than anything. He answered my prayers, he saw how much this meant to me and answered me.. I was happy..

My Mother called my Sister to come with a cake and cool drink when she knocks off so we could celebrate, she was happy judging from how she responded over the phone.

My Sister and I, we only share a Mother.

Her Father passed on, my Mother got involved with mine and he also passed on when I was 7. Both Men left her with nothing, they weren't that financial stable..

I remember when I was young, my Sister was also involved in the squad that used to make fun of me. She would tease me, wouldn't wanna be seen with me in public that much

Back then she was feeling herself, thought she was the best thing that has ever happened after peanut butter. It's only now, as I got older that her attitude

started to change towards me. Also when I was 18 I started doing makeup up, so it could help enhance my beauty that's when her attitude changed when my image changed.

My best friend Bayanda, the one I grew up with came through. She has a baby now, he's 4 years old. Fell pregnant when she was still doing grade 12. I feel like there's some jealousy from her side. She started changing bit by bit when I passed grade 12 and she had to rewrite the following year because the pregnancy got in the way. She didn't pass that well, and even after rewriting. She still didn't pass that well.. She works at some clothing store owned by the Chinese...

My Mother was in the kitchen cooking. We going to have a celebratory lunch.. Baya and I were sitting in the living room..

Baya: So vele uya eUniversity (You going to

University)

Me: Yes tomorrow I'm going to the mall to pay the registration fee and then go and register next week

Baya: That's nice

(Silence)

Baya: At least nawe uzobuya with two degrees (You will come back with two degrees)

Me: I'm sorry?

Baya: Phela University has killed a lot of people like you

Me: Huh?

Baya: Akus ikukini lapha (That's not your home)

I looked at her..

Baya: There's no Mother who will tell you this and that, you have all the freedom. You will be febaring tot kwa hell Dwaa

Me: Why would you say?

Baya: I heard guys there are hot and loaded, very

hard to resist

Me: I don't think I'm going there for boys

Baya: You are 22 only had one boyfriend that did a hit and run after breaking your virginity. Umdala Dwaa! Dlala nge nquza kayi one!

Me: I've worked hard to go there, I'm not going to mess it up

Baya: Soke sibone! (we will see)

VIRGO

I walked into the kitchen, our helper Sis'khosi was carrying her duties as always..

Me: Sis K

She looked at me..

Khosi: Awukahle Ludwe, ngimdala ngingaka uthi Sisi awunamahloni (Wait a minute, I'm way too old to be your sister)

Me: The kitchen looks spotless

Khosi: What do you want?

Me: Did you hear I'm going to varsity?

Khosi: I heard.. At least I'll have peace

Me: Don't be that Person, you know you going to miss me

Khosi: I wish

Me: Uva uBomi? (Where is Bomi)

Khosi: Ave ingicika ke lento yakho yokudelela umawakho (This thing of you disrespecting your mother is annoying)

Me: You know the story

Khosi: She has she tried very hard to provide for you

Me: Some other things are bigger than just providing

Khosi: And some other kids only wish to have your life

Me: Can't wait to go to varsity just to be away from here

Khosi: What do you wanna have for lunch?

Me: I'm actually going out, lunch won't be necessary

Khosi: Okay

Me: Would you like me to bring you something?

Khosi: Anything will do

Me: Ayt.. I'll see you later

AISHA

Ma: Food is almost ready

Me: Thank you Ma, you really didn't have to

Ma: My child is going to university that's a great achievement, it would be somehow not to celebrate

Me: Thank you again

The front door opened and my Sister walked in..

Sis: Uphi? Uphi? (Where is she)

Me: Here goes drama

Sis: Mntaka Ma! (My Mother's child)

She walked over and put the cake on the table..

Ma: Mntaka Sis 'Zanele!

Me: Thobeka don't start with me

Ma: Mntaka kaBab'Godfrey

I rolled my eyes..

Sis: Ikhulile intombi yakwa Ngwenya maan (You have grown up)

She hugged me..

Me: Really it's nothing

We broke the hug..

Sis: Awww Ngeke we have to scream, I'm sure I wasn't here for the scream

We both looked at each other and screamed.

Ma: Ayy umsindo! (so much noise)

Sis: Bless you now I can finally brag about my Sister who is going to be a Doctor

Me: Dental therapist

Sis: Whatever.. Oksalayo you are going to a ned school

Ma: It's good to have you back home Thobeka

Sis: I had to leave work early, I couldn't focus with all the excitement

My Mom shook her head..

Ma: I think we can eat now.. Baya Sondela Sisi (Baya come closer)

VIRGO

After taking a shower still wet with a towel wrapped

on my lower body. I took a picture and uploaded on Instagram.. I have approximately 30k followers on Instagram, 23k followers on Twitter. I don't really do Facebook, it's way too classless for my status. All my followers are women, even hot ones so you can just imagine..

I have been single for 3 months now, my last girl broke up with me after finding out that I was cheating on her. I am not going to beg, I did once and she never sulked more so I left her like that. I'm in communication with one in the DMs, reason why I'm going out for lunch. If you my girl you have to look the part. Can't be seen with an ugly girl or a disadvantaged girl next to me. Your makeup has to be on point, you have to be neat, your wig. It shouldn't be old and the nails have to come alright too.. I don't see myself with a basic girl, can't be seen in public with such fuckery nor take pictures with such. It's embarrassing and degrading to who I am.

.

To be continued

03

AISHA

[A FEW WEEKS LATER]

I woke up very early in the morning to go and register. Unfortunately my bursary was taking longer with that part of my life, but they will surely refund me so I can give my Sister back her money. She kept on budgeting, money for groceries was even deducted for this purpose. I am grateful for what my family is doing for me..

I left home at 4:00am, and my Sister was the one accompanying me. We wanted to come back early since we were traveling with taxis and didn't really know the directions. The taxi from our town to Pretoria was the one that delayed us a little at least for 1hr30min..

We arrived in Pretoria exactly at 08:00am. Then we took the one to Ga-rankuwa that was going to drop us off at the university.

Stepping through the gate I could feel myself getting a bit emotional, this is happening for me. A girl from humble beginnings being a student here, is God's unquestionable blessings on me.. The walk to where the registrations were taking place was a dreadful walk, it was very far but we arrived.

It was crazy full, I hope they are fast..

Thobeka: I have to call Mom and let her know that we have arrived already

Me: Okay, I'll hold the font

Thobeka: Okay

I greeted the girl I was sitting next to her..

VIRGO

My Mother has never showed up on my anything, today. She forced to come with me, accompany me..

We arrived a bit early, and we weren't far ahead. Registrations started exactly 8am. I hate that she wanted to participate in this Part of my life, and I hated the looks she was getting. My Mother is very beautiful, she turns a lot of heads. My beauty I believe it's from her side.. These little hungry boys and old men were already undressing her with the looks they were giving her, and she was friendly at how she responded to the greetings..

When I heard the story, it was made clear to me that during the Apartheid Era. Our Great, Great Grandmother was involved with a white Man. Hence

our surname "Swartboo".

So the white genes, favoured us a lot..

Ma: It's full

Me: At least we will be done soon

(Silence)

Ma: You know I wasn't all for this Dental Therapy thing but seeing this University I think I'm starting to warm up to the feeling

Me: I'm glad you do

She held my hand and squeezed it..

Ma: I'm proud of you baby

Me: Thank you

AISHA

Thobeka: At least we moving now

Me: Ya at least.. You know Baya wasn't all for me coming here

Thobeka: To hell with that one, she has always been jealous of you

Me: I don't understand.. Why? It's not like my blessings will come to her

Thobeka: It's just jealousy, she's okay with you guys sitting at home together and doing nothing

Me: Ya.. Thank you for the registration fee

Thobeka: Don't mention it

Me: I'll pay you back when the Bursary comes through

Thobeka: Take 2.5k and give me 2k. At least buy clothes and things you will need. Varsity life is expensive

Me: True

Thobeka: Take care of yourself, if you wanna party don't forget your books

Me: I'm not about that life

Thobeka: I'm glad

VIRGO

Girls here didn't impress me much, they were too basic. You can just tell they come from difficult homes, this is probably what they all have. There's no plan B to fall back on, it's this or nothing...

I finally carried out my registration, with the Admin people busy complimenting me and my Mom. It's not unusual though, we get that a lot..

The timetable was crazy. I'll be doing a lot of modules and I don't even know one. At least there was no math and physics, only Biology and I think the rest are dental related. What was left now, was to get a clinic coat and the text books... I'll get those when we start..

We walked to the car with her arm around my shoulders. She kissed me..

Bomi: My only child has grown up

Me: Don't start, you embarrassing me

Bomi: I don't care who says what! I'm a proud mother

AISHA

We looked at them making a walk out, there was noway you couldn't look at them. I've seen beautiful people in my life, but these ones..

Thobeka: Tjerrr some people have good genes

Me: Do you think it's his sister?

Thobeka: Maybe his Mother, or sugar mama

I chuckled..

Me: Kodwa Thobeka

Thobeka: How will you guys concentrate with guys like that?

Me: He's probably a fuck boy, going to be changing first years. I'm sure he's doing medicine

Thobeka: Guys like know that they hot, and they use that to play girls. I feel sorry for his girlfriend already

Me: Me too!

.

To be continued

04

AISHA

The registration process went well, though it took longer but it went very well. It was 16:00, when we

went back home that day. Tired from the whole ordeal, but we got it done..

Life went back to normal after registering, there wasn't anything interesting that was happening. Not that my life is fascinating, I'm an introvert, I enjoy my own company a lot. When the time neared for me to go to varsity, anxiety found it's way in. I'll be sharing a space with different people, I'll have to be in the mist of people. I was being taken out of my comfort zone..

My Sister organized a car for me that will help with my luggage, she said it was a friend. I didn't ask much, I was just glad that someone was helping me than me traveling with taxis to res.. Our Res was in town...

Sis: Are you going to be fine?

My Mother and my Sister accompanied me too..

Me: I'll be fine

Ma: At least you starting with classes tomorrow so ngeke ubhoreke (you won't get bored)

Me: That's true

Ma: We have to go

Me: Thank you for coming with

My Mother hugged me, then my Sister hugged me too..

I tried my level best not to cry, knowing that it'll be a while until I see them again...

I walked them out to the car..

Me: Thank your friend for me

Sis: I will

Ma: Ube right, and please take care of yourself

Me: I'll be alright and thank you

Ma: I love you

Me: I love you too

Sis: I love you nami

Me: I love you too

I looked at them walking to get into the car..

VIRGO

I walked around looking at it with my hands buried deep in my pockets..

Ma: I like it, it's a good bachelor's flat. Wonderpark is beautiful

Me: It's not too bad

Ma: And the rent is affordable

Me: It's not the best but..

Ma: Ludwe just say thank you, everything else is unnecessary

Me: I am not going to say thank you for something that's not making me happy

Ma: You close to the mall, security seems good rent is affordable! it's R3 500.. What more do you want? A townhouse? You are a student! You don't have money, you broke, I have money!

Me: And you must be proud.. Good for you

Ma: I thought that we could stop at the mall, eat lunch before I leave but with your attitude I just lost my appetite.. You can also forget about the Plasma TV

Me: How will I play my games if I don't have a TV? So I brought my Playstation for nothing?

Ma: You shouldn't even be playing any games, you doing a lot of modules half of the time you'll be at school! You don't have time for games anymore, 41k is a lot of money to waste!

Me: Bomi you are my Mother! I didn't ask to be born

okay? It's your job to take care of me!

She nodded..

Ma: Maybe I should've done the Abortion!

I looked at her..

Me: What the fuck did you just say to me?

Ma: If being your Mother is the biggest regret in your life, then I should've saved you by doing the abortion

Me: So to you I'm a mistake?

Ma: You make me feel like I am a mistake by being your Mother! I try my best with you but you are always making me feel like I ain't doing enough!

Me: Then why don't you tell me who my father is?

Ma: I don't know! I was drunk and had a one night stand with a guy I hooked up with for the night

Me: See what I mean? Who goes and do shit like that?

Ma: I am sorry that I had the one night stand, I'm sorry you don't have a father! And I'm always trying

to give you everything so that you don't feel like you don't have a father! I love you so much

Me: You didn't want me

Ma: That was then Virgo! I felt like you were going to hold my life back but when you moved in with me, all that changed. You were the best mistake that has ever happened to me!

Me: Please Bomi if Grandma was still alive, I'd still be living in the Eastern Cape so don't act like you wanted me.. You just didn't have a choice!

She picked up her bag from the counter and her car keys..

Ma: I'll pass by at the mall, at Game I'll buy you the TV and try to have it delivered today. Clearly this is not going to end anytime soon so.. Goodbye, take care of yourself and I love you. I'll be very vigilant with my money incase you repeat the year

She gave me a faint smile and walked to the door..

Me: Thank you for believing in me (sarcasm)

Ma: Anytime!

She walked out...

AISHA

I went back to my room to sort out everything. My roommate moved in before me, her things were sorted on her side..

I didn't have much, at least she has a fridge and I'm hoping she won't mind if I share it with her..

The door opened, and she walked in..

She looked at me..

Her: Hi

Me: Hi

Her: Nduvho

Me: Aisha

Ndu: Nice to meet you

Me: Same here

Ndu: hoping we will live in peace

Me: Me too

Ndu: Do you have a boyfriend?

Me: Uhm.. No

Ndu: Good.. I am not for shagging, bringing a guy over for that

I chuckled..

Me: Don't worry you safe, I hope I'm safe too

Ndu: Mine is back at home so you very safe

Me: What course are you doing?

Ndu: Medicine

Me: Ohw nice

Ndu: You?

Me: Dental Therapy

Ndu: I don't know much about it

Me: Same here.. Guess I'll know tomorrow

Ndu: I guess so

Me: Hey can I please share in your fridge?

Ndu: Yes then that means we will take turns in cleaning it

Me: I don't mind

Ndu: I was going to go and do some grocery shopping at Pnp, wanna come.

I only have R500, I'll have to use it wisely..

Me: Yeah sure, why not?

Ndu: Okay let's go

VIRGO

I realized that I might have been a bit hard on my Mother, I won't be seeing her that much anymore and we shouldn't have parted in this manner. I took my phone and called her..

Me: Please pick up

She picked up on the 3rd ring..

Ma: Ludwe

Me: I'm so sorry my love

She kept quiet..

Me: Where are you?

Ma: I am still in the car, haven't left

That could only mean one thing, she has been crying..

Me: Still wanna do lunch?

Ma: Maybe not, you've hurt me I don't think I wanna see you right now

Me: I just said I was sorry

Ma: I'm just tired Ludwe, I am tired of the constant fights and the insults.. I don't wanna end up dying of stroke or heart related issues. You know how to

hurt me

Me: I didn't mean too.. I'm sorry. I won't be seeing you everyday anymore and I don't want us to depart in bad terms. I miss you already, you know I'm not comfortable with change, and it's really getting to me that I won't be seeing your beautiful face everyday miss pretty thang

She chuckled..

Ma: The award winning apology

Me: Is it working?

Ma: It's going to take more than that

Me: I know and I promise you that I won't fail, I know how much you spending on me

Ma: And I don't mind, I just want you to be happy and never feel like you need a father when I'm here

Me: Thank you for everything that you do for me

Ma: Come down before I change my mind

Me: Okay miss thang

She laughed..

Me: I love you so much, you know you my go too girl, and I got you

Ma: I love you too baby

Me: okay I'm coming down

.

To be continued

05

AISHA

The most anticipated day had finally arrived, we starting with our classes today. I was excited and nervous at the same time..

My first class was "Oral Health", it was starting at 8:00am..

The bus schedule was as follows:

6:30am

7:00am

9:00am

12:00

It was crazy going down to the bus, It was a lot of us and I thought there was only going to be 1 bus. I was relieved to see 4 buses lined up by the entrance. Since everyone was going for the first and second, a handful of us went and hoped in on the last one..I was catching the 7am one..

I sat down and looked at my student card with a smile, I'm officially a first year student.

VIRGO

I got out of the shower to get dressed. A few outfits were laid on the bed, couldn't pick up one. I was torn between all of them, but whatever I wear. I'll have to make sure that it validates my status.. I will make it on time, only if traffic won't be a bitch..

I took my phone and checked a few messages before getting dressed..

AISHA

I enjoyed the ride just staring out of the window and admiring the town. Pretoria is beautiful, I was already imagining myself living here after graduation..

The Bus finally drove into school, most students who lived at the Res in town were already making their way to class..

I checked the time it was 7:50am. 10min left before our first class starts.. We got off the bus and I isolated myself by going to stand on the grass. Being an introvert is a disadvantage when it comes to such situations. I watched everyone getting on with their day, and I completely fell out of place, I don't even know where to start searching for the lecture hall..

As I was standing there, with my feet frozen to the grass. This girl came my way..

Her: Hi

She greeted me with a smile..

Her: I saw you during registration, you were sitting in our section

Me: Yes I'm doing BDT

Her: Me too

Me: Really?

Her: My name is Asenathi but you can call me Asa

Me: Aisha

Asa: Well then it seems like we both lost, we should start searching

Me: I think so

We went to the Oral health building and searched through. Asa was comfortable asking people, and they directed us to the exact lecture hall.. We opened the door and made our way in, already the class was full.

Do you know in high school when you walk into the class and everyone starts throwing sly comments? I expected that. I kept my eyes down and followed Asa, she found us a bench to sit. It was empty, she went in first and I followed..

To my surprise no one said anything, everyone was minding their own except for one girl who was busy

speaking loud. She's definitely going to be the coolest student in class, she wasn't even shy..

We sat there until some girl walked in, she came directly and sat in our bench. So I was in the middle..

Her: Hi

We greeted her back..

Her: Poziswa but please call me Po

She was beautiful no lie.. We introduced ourselves too and continued talking about random things. I didn't think I was going to make friends so fast, apparently they also don't know anyone in class. Their high school mates chose other varsities but Po mentioned some are here just doing different courses..

We stayed chatting until 10:00am, the lecturer wasn't coming and Miss loud mouth had introduced herself as "Ntombifuthi".

She was now standing at the front cracking jokes.. This girl is one of my own, she's chubby and seems not to give a fuck. She looks confident, that could never be me..

The door opened and we kept quiet thinking it was the lecturer, but this guy I saw when I was registering made his way in. He's probably lost.. We all remained quiet as he took off his bucket hat and made his way to the back, he sat down a bit far from the other guys keeping a serious social distancing.

He immediately took out his phone and glanced down at it, we still remained quiet.

Ntombi: Aii no!! How are we to concentrate now?

We laughed..

Ntombi: Sorry bhuti.. Kancance

The guy looked at her..

Ntombi: I'm nominating myself to be your best friend, and partner in any activity that's going to be done in our course

He looked around and shrugged his shoulders..

Guy: Yeah sure, why not

Ntombi: And with that being said class, I'm going to sit next to my newly found friend

She walked over to take her things and went to sit next to him..

Ntombi: Scoot to the side phela

He moved over to give her more space..

This girl has guts! I could never do that, I'd die..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:50] : 06

AISHA

The classes were just introductions. Other modules required us to be in a bigger hall, that regarding English and Psychology. All first years were under one roof, it was crazy packed and nerve wrecking. But at least it was a lot of people and I get to hide off well.

Our class was very much fascinated by Virgo, I was too. I thought this guy was going to do medicine. You can just tell he comes from a serious financial

stable background, he must've went to an expensive private school. He should've gotten good grades.

I was comfortable with Ase and Po. They lovely people except for Po, who is very vocal but she gives us life seeing how reserved I am. She makes the squad not to be boring.

Lunchtime came and we went to the cafeteria, R1500 from our registration fee went to meals. Now I understand the expensive part of the registration fee..

I was a bit stressed with the whole situation of books, my bursary will come through month end so I don't know what I'll do..

Ase came back.

Ase: Apparently at the library they lend books

Me: That's better

Ase: We need to go get our library cards done so we can get the psychology text books before they run out

Po: I agree

It's good to go through struggle with other people, I don't get to get stressed alone.

Ase: Ladies in other news, what do you think about the new hottie in our class?

Po: Yena muhle shame jealous down (he's hot)

Me: I'm shocked at how that girl threw herself at him

Ase: I know right?

Po: She's been glued by his side all the time

Ase: Co-joined twins

We laughed..

Me: Do you think they going to date?

Ase: Naaa.. Guys like him usually associate with girls like

She looked around..

Ase: Those

Me: I agree

VIRGO

I didn't mind this Ntombifuthi of a human being, being my friend. I don't know anyone around here, and I like her vibe. If circumstances had it another way, I would've told her where to get off but I need her for now and I hope she's smart because we going to be doing a lot of work..

I had taken her out, we drove to eat in town. I let her choose, she chose McDonald's. Typical!.. She

couldn't stop taking pictures of the food and place. This is luxury to her, she probably can't just walk in here on a normal day to get a meal. I don't really like McDonald's, their burger patties don't taste nice. Same as Steers, they a no go area for me..

Futhi: Thank you for this, I really appreciate it
I faked a smile..

Me: You welcome

Futhi: So you loaded?

I looked at her..

Me: Define loaded?

Futhi: You rich?

Me: As opposed to what?

Futhi: Eish nayo I English ibuye isuke (English goes sometimes)

She cleared her throat..

Futhi: I mean you here only having a drink, I'm

having a full meal. So this is not new to you?

Me: Yeah the thing is

I looked at her, can't afford to be rude. I don't have friends yet..

Me: I'm not really hungry that's why

I looked at the time..

Me: Finish up, we have to drive back

Futhi: Okay.. Thank you again

AISHA

On our way to our first afternoon class I rang my Mother since we had a few free minutes left..

Ma: Sontoki

Me: Ma

Ma: Kunjani? (how are you)

Me: I'm good and you?

Ma: Ngiyaphila (I'm well)

Me: Was just checking up on you

Ma: You done for the day?

Me: No.. I am going to my first afternoon class

Ma: Okay ke Sisi

Me: Are you sure that you okay?

Ma: Yes.. Iqolo nje, I did the laundry

Me: Okay rest ke

Ma: I'm glad you okay and school is going well

Me: I'll call you after class

Ma: Alright

Me: I love you.. Bye

Ma: I love you too

VIRGO

As we were driving back, I had on my bucket hat. She was taking pictures and videos, I know she'll be uploading them on social media. A big part of mine wanted to tell her off, I actually clenched my Jaws so I don't become rude to her...

"Oko wahamb'eth'uzobuya

Wakhwela inqwelo ntaka

Wats hona kweziy'ntaba

Ntyilo ntyilo njenge nyoni ndiya ntyiloza

Mama ndincede khawund'size Mama

Tata ndincede khawund'size Tata

Intlungu zothando yaz'kubhlungu uthanda umuntu

Nami angizenzi cel'ungisize Mama"

Even the song that was playing was not my taste, she was playing it via Bluetooth from her phone.

Huawei , outdated. What a struggle!.. Probably her first time also being in the front seat of a car. I drive a charcoal golf 7, my Mother got it for me a year ago. She's still paying for it, not really bad for a first car...

AISHA

We walked into the lab, we were attending Biology. We sat on the same row, each chair had a microscope at the table. This was exciting...

The lecturer showed up after 15min, don't know what's with them showing up late.

Lecturer: Good afternoon

We greeted back, he had manuals with him.

Him: I'm Dr Lamar, I'll be teaching you biology. It's a

6 months module, so if you fail the exam in June you coming back next year. I suggest you start being serious now..

We listened attentively when the Duo walked in. Futhi was holding a pack of McDonald's.

Lamar: Good afternoon, next time please show up on time

Futhi: Yes Sir, sorry Sir

They went and sat down..

Dr Lamar put the manuals on the first row, take one and pass also tick next to your name and student number. Guard them with your lives, and make them your friends.

He continued talking as we got the manuals, they got to me. I was sitting at the corner. After ticking my name and taking one, I would have to get off my chair to give the row behind me. There he was sitting behind me, I held my breath with my knees weak to give him. He kept his eyes on me, literally looked me in the eye and didn't move them until I put the manuals on the table with my hands trembling..

I walked back to my table with my knees wobbling..

I sat down on my chair still shaking..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:50] : 07

AISHA NGWENYA

Our last class was "Radiography". The same tradition happened, we got Manuals and the introduction to the course. It was 15:00, and we were already tired. We wanted to go..

Lecturer: As from tomorrow, we will be starting with the topic "Pantomography" then we will move on to bite wings. The reason why we starting with these two topics is that from next week Monday, we will be at the clinics doing Pans and bite wings. Hence you have clinicals too on your timetables. The quota is steep we need 150 Pans and 50 bite wings for the year. The sessions are 2 hours, 2 times a week. We have 4 Pan machines so we will pair you guys.. Sometimes it will require you guys to sacrifice lunch to go to the clinic to meet your quota, because if the year ends and you haven't reached the qouta then you will definitely repeat the year. Imagine repeating only clinicals for the year. Our theory goes for only 6 months, so I suggest everyone be serious ya?

We nodded..

Lecturer: I have paired you guys already, I'll call out the pairs and as from tomorrow you sit next to your partner until the duration of the course

Pairing? I wasn't feeling well about this. Can't we just pair ourselves? I know I'll go with Ase or Po.. This is too much..

The lecturer started calling out names, if they call the pair you raise your hand so your partner can see you...

Lecturer: Group D. This the last group and they'll be going in Monday, and Friday afternoons. From 14:00-16:00, please note it down on your timetables so you guys don't clash and crowd the clinic.. Theory is on Mondays and Clinicals are in the afternoon

She further went on to call out names, the groups consisted of 8 members. She called out the pairs..

Lecturer: Virgo Swartbooi

Virgo raised his hand..

Lecturer: You'll be paired with a Miss Aisha Ngwenya

My heart stopped beating for a few seconds. The class went dead..

Lecturer: Miss Aisha?

I shyly rose my hand up..

Lecturer: And we done

Futhi: I request a protest, I'd like to be paired with my best friend or rather be in his group

Lecturer: That won't happen, the Pairing is complete

Po started clapping her hands, she was in my group..

Po: We have a hottie in our group

I slowly turned to look at Virgo, he was busy chatting to Futhi..

Me: What's happening to my life?

Lecturer: See you guys tomorrow at 8am, don't

forget we sit in pairs and please read page 57
pantomography so you know what it's about... We
done, enjoy the rest of the day

She walked out...

Futhi: Aii no I forbid the pairing

Everyone laughed as we packed up and walked out..

Me: I don't know how this is going to workout

Po put her arm over my shoulders..

Po: We'll be fine girl!!!

VIRGO SWARTBOOI

Futhi was bitching about not being paired with me,
It was starting to get irritating.

Futhi: Aisha? That girl is even a ghost have you
heard her say anything in class?

Me: We have just started to get to know each other,
I don't even know them all

Futhi: At least if I was in your group

I stopped..

Me: It's just pairing! Give it a rest!

Futhi: Ohw

I left her there and walked to my car..

AISHA NGWENYA

We got into the bus and when it was full, it drove
off.. I was still stuck on what happened in our
radiography class, my heart was beating fast. Out

of everyone I had to be paired with Virgo? How did that come about?

We got to the Res, and I bid my friends goodbye and went to my room.. Futhi started a whatsapp group for the class, I am a ghost there. I just read and pass, though I did check Virgo's profile picture and this guy is really good looking.. I also took it upon myself to search him on social media, couldn't find him on Facebook. Found him on Instagram, I followed him just to admire him..

I have this thing, ever since I dated that guy in high school who pretended to love me only to hit it and ran, I stayed away from dating. So since I ain't dating I tend to create a fantasy world, where if I see a handsome guy I make all fantasy scenarios of us dating.

Sometimes I just masturbate to the fantasy, I don't really put my finger deep inside. J ust massage my

clit and extend my fingers down to rub against my hole until I get wet.

That's how I get through..

VIRGO

I got to my flat and showered, I have bought takeaways. Had to drive down to Pretoria west to get Barcelos. I love their grilled peri peri chicken..

It's frustrating that so far there's no girl that has caught my attention at the campus, maybe more will come through I mean it was just the first day after all...

My Mother's video call came through..

Ma: There he is

Me: My love

Ma: How was your first day?

Me: It wasn't that bad, just introductions

Ma: Have you made friends?

Me: Just one, she's a loud mouth

Ma: It's not difficult for you to make friends

Me: It is.. I am very specific

Ma: Ludwe.. You need to understand that not everyone comes from a blessed background like you, if you keep on like that. You won't have any friends

Me: They eat at McDonald's

She chuckled..

Ma: What's wrong with McDonald's?

Me: It's McDonald's, what's next? KFC? the Beyoncé restaurant of poor people

Ma: I love KFC

Me: Of course you do, you were poor remember?
Until you got Grandma's land and made something
out of it.. That's why people get sick, KFC their
chicken is soggy and smelly

Ma: Kodwa uyazixelela Sana Lwam (You are full of
yourself)

Me: We'll see as time goes on, I should've went to
UJ or Wits I'm sure there's people there who are at
my level

Ma: You are not at Wits nor UJ , if you feel that way
why don't you take them to good restaurants?

Me: They take pictures! From when we get in, to
when we eating

She laughed..

Me: It's terrible!

AISHA NGWENYA

I was studying the topic for tomorrow, when my

Sister's call came through. I told her about what happened today and she was fascinated by the Virgo issue..

Sis: Yhuuuuuuuu mara Sontoki, how you going to survive?

Me: I don't know.. You know I have bad experiences with cool people remember how I was bullied?

Sis: Not all people are terrible, maybe you judging this Virgo guy. He could be a good Person

Me: We'll see

Sis: J ust be yourself and it's not like you two are friends or dating, you just Partners

Me: Ya at least

Sis: I'll call you again tomorrow

Me: Okay send my love to Mom

Sis: I'll do so

Me: Bye

.

To be continued

[BASED ON TRUE LIFE EVENTS]

[03/14, 21:51] : 08

AISHA

I prepared for this topic that we were given as if like I was preparing for an exam. I was serious when I said that I won't play around, this is all I have. I'm not about to disappoint my family and myself, God gave me this opportunity and I'm going to use it the best way..

Virgo was late for class as always, but this time he wasn't that much late. Everyone was sitting according to how they paired us for Radiography, we were sharing the bench with group see. It was

them first, then me and Virgo's space was empty next to me..

He walked in class and the whole walk became a slow motion to me. He looked at his watch then looked around, until he saw the empty space next to me. I seriously thought that he would've forgotten my face, I've always been forgettable anyway..

He came and sat next to me, my heart started to beat fast. He made me very nervous.. He was smelling good too and he looks clean at all times. I've never really look at him from upclose, nor have I kept a longer eye contact...

Virgo: Good morning

Me: M.. Morning

I was staring at the front as I greeted back. He placed his back pack on the table and laid his chin on it, with his hand at a far distance busy with his

phone.. I swallowed and looked down at my notes..
Our Radiography teacher walked in, Mrs Malaka..

Malaka: Good morning BDT students

We greeted her back..

Malaka: Let's get started, please put away your
manuals and anything from the table please

We did so..

Malaka: I don't wanna see any paper or anything on
the table except for hands

She looked at us..

Malaka: Group A, please one member upfront to
present the lesson on Pan

The class went quiet..

Malaka: I did say that you guys should prepare, if you didn't then there's no point of this lesson, no point of clinicals, no point of anything!

Futhi: We didn't know that we would be required to present

Malaka: But you were told to prepare, yah?

We kept quiet..

Malaka: Group B? C? D?

We looked at each other in our bench..

Malaka: I can simply go to the Dean and tell him that I'm canceling the class, everyone will repeat next year.. We not here to play!

No one said anything..

Malaka: Anyone? Not even a definition?

Virgo looked at us in our row..

Virgo: Guys come on no one?

The guy sitting next to me talked..

Po: Aisha was reading notes

Me: I..

Virgo: Aisha would like to do it for our group, group
D

Me: Huh?

Malaka: Miss Aisha.. The floor is yours

All eyes were on me, my nerves shot through the roof. This is high school all over again, I'll stand there and they will make fun of me and laugh at me..

Malaka: Miss Aisha?

Virgo: Pretty Miss Thang please

Me: I don't know.. I have.. I'm scared of people's eyes

Virgo: I'll stand next to you for moral support

This guy was smooth..

Virgo got up..

Virgo: Come

I slowly got up..

Po: Yes Aisha!! Go baby

Everyone else started clapping too..

We walked to the front and Virgo stood next to me..

Malaka: Well let's do it

Ase: That's my friend

I looked at everyone, if I don't do this. I might be an embarrassment and a laughing stock for the rest of the year..

I closed my eyes and played with my fingers.

Me: Panoramic dental x ray" is a procedure that uses a very small dose of ionizing radiation to capture the entire mouth in one image

Malaka: What is it used for?

Me: To plan for the treatment of dentures, braces, extraction, and implants

Malaka: What procedures can you see from a Pan x

ray?

Me: Caries, periodontitis, open bite, misalignment of teeth, impacted teeth, partially erupted teeth to say the least

Malaka: Can you maybe tell us about the machine, parts of it if you studied the diagram too?

Me: It consists of two sides. An x-ray tube is mounted on one side and the x-ray film or a detector on the opposite side. The patient's head is positioned with chin, forehead and side rests. The patient may be provided with a bite blocker to open the mouth slightly for a clearer picture.

Malaka: How does the procedure work?

Me: X-rays are a form of radiation like light or radio

waves. X-rays pass through most objects, including the body. Once it is carefully aimed at the part of the body being examined, an x-ray machine produces a small burst of radiation that passes through the body, recording an image on photographic film or a special detector.

Malaka: Is the procedure painful?

Me: No.. It's quick, painless and easy to perform

Malaka: Benefits?

Me: No radiation remains in a patient's body after an x-ray examination.

Malaka: Risks?

Me: Pregnancy.. Women should always inform their dentist or oral surgeon if there is any possibility that they are pregnant.

The class went quiet as I opened my eyes.

Malaka: You studied all of that yesterday?

Me: Yes

Malaka: Why aren't you doing BDS?

Me: They took me in BDT

Malaka: You should apply to do BDS for next year, I have no doubt that you will do good in your first year

I nodded..

Malaka: That was beautiful, thank you Miss Aisha

The class gave me a standing ovation as I made my way to take my sit. This has never happened, people giving me a standing ovation. Not dissing me, not making fun of me no nothing..

Virgo: You killed it, put it here

We fist bumped..

Me: Thank you

Virgo: Maybe we can be study partners don't you think? And always team up for such things

Me: Are you sure?

Virgo: Yeah why not?

I looked down trying not to blush..

Me: Okay I'd like that

(silence)

Virgo: You beautiful by the way

Me: Thank you

Malaka: Thank you for saving the day Miss Aisha,

now we can go down to the clinic and see the machine

We got up and I let everyone pass from our bench..

All I was hearing was "Good one Aisha"..

Virgo placed his hand on my waist, I got goosebumps..

Virgo: Guess I'll see you

Me: Okay

He walked away, Ase and Po came to me..

Po: Ahhhhh... I saw that

I smiled..

Me: It was nothing

Ase: You saved our Asses!

Po: You deserve to walk around in a Tiara

We walked out to the clinic, this felt nice. This felt very nice...

The Radiography clinics were on the 3rd floor, we went up the stairs to the clinics.

Malaka: Okay group yourselves, we have 4 machines don't overcrowd.. I'll come to each room and explain

Futhi: Do we pair ourselves or you'll pair us?

We laughed..

Malaka: No group anyhow for now and please if a room is operating wait a bit until they done

Ase: Ohw well we are fine

Me: Yes we are

Virgo left Futhi standing and a couple of others,
then came to us..

Virgo: Ladies

They greeted back..

Virgo: J ust wanna steal my partner for this grouping,
or we can all go in together

Po: Yes we can go all in together

Virgo: That's what I like to hear

Futhi stood there giving us all kinds of stares with
her arms folded...

We walked through and got in the second room it
was empty, Virgo wanted himself next to me..

Me: It looks exactly like in the diagram

Virgo: Yeah?

Me: Yes..

Virgo: Someone please tell Mrs M that we don't need her this side

We laughed..

Futhi walked in..

Futhi: Ohh don't mind me, just wanna be a part of the group

Me: No problem

Po: What else Aisha?

I walked around the machine explaining the parts I saw on the diagram..

.

To be continued

[BASED ON REAL LIFE EVENTS]

[03/14, 21:51] : 09

AISHA NGWENYA

I had the best day at school today, being acknowledged for doing something good without anyone throwing in sly comments my way made me happy. I guess varsity is different from high school, they seem mature and do act like grown ups..

The day ended with us being tired as always, I wonder if we will ever get used to our hectic schedule..

When I got to the res, first thing I did was to call my Mother and told her about what happened at school. She was happy that I was starting to enjoy school

and that I feel comfortable..

Ma: That is good Sontoki, I'm glad you enjoying school

Me: Me too

Ma: God is good, I prayed tirelessly for this

Me: Thank you Ma

Ma: Let me leave you to rest, we will talk again

Me: Okay Ma.. Bye

Ma: Bye Sisi

Right when I got off the call, I had a whatsapp message. I checked, and it read:

"Ms pretty little thang"

There's only one Person who has ever addressed me like that. I checked the profile picture and it was

him, it was Virgo..

I collected myself and replied:

Me: Hi

Virgo: I got your number from the group, hope you don't mind

Me: No it's okay

Virgo: You did well today in class

Me: Thank you

Virgo: Was wondering if I could take you out this weekend, as a friend and a classmate

Me: Uhm...

Virgo: Don't worry you have like 4 days to think about it

This was unbelievable and difficult to process. Guys usually don't take interest in me, in high school many guys swore that they would never date me even if I wake up tomorrow looking like Beyoncé. I don't know if Virgo really likes me or he has an Agenda, I mean Virgo belongs with Girls who match him. Match the Person that he is, we are from two different worlds. We are not alike

VIRGO SWARTBOOI

Aisha is definitely not those girls I go out with, but where she doesn't meet the requirements she's making it up for it in another department. It's rare to find a girl with such brains, she's smart and that's the only thing about her that's getting to me.

I need to keep her in my corner, and also for the fact that she looks like she has a very low self esteem. I saw today, such girls it's easy to tame and control them. They make good wife materials, someone my

Mother would be proud of. Someone who won't go out there and taint my surname, someone who will make a Good Mother to my kids one day.

She has a bright future, she won't be entirely dependent on me she will be able to get up and get her own and girls like her are very grounded. She doesn't come across as someone who would cheat, but definitely comes across as someone who would keep on forgiving me when I cheat. Whilst I'm out there doing who knows what, she'll be back at home being a Good wife...

I called my Mother and told her about Ais ha, I know it's still early but I really need to get this girl..

Ma: She sounds like a lovely someone

Me: She's very smart Ma

Ma: Is her family rich?

Me: I don't think so

Ma: Is she a makeup girl? Weaves?

Me: Not entirely, she has locks for now

Ma: And you like this girl?

Me: Yes I do

Ma: How come?

Me: What do you mean?

Ma: The Ludwe I know doesn't go for ordinary girls

Me: I did mention she's smart right?

Ma: Just don't hurt this child

Me: I won't

Ma: Can't wait to meet her one day if that day comes

Me: That day will come

Ma: Okay we'll see

AISHA NGWENYA

I went straight to Ase's room to tell her about this and show her the messages..

Ase: Okay calm down

Me: I mean why me?

Ase: Why not you?

Me: I'm not at his level

Ase: You are beautiful Aisha don't sell yourself short, why wouldn't someone like Virgo like you

Me: You think?

Ase: You don't believe that you beautiful? If you weren't Virgo wouldn't have taken an interest in you. You've got him girl, first chat and he's asking you out on a date? Do you bath with pink salt?

I chuckled..

Me: No I don't even know what that is

Ase: I bath with that and so far no interesting nigga has came my way, I only get chancers

Me: I believe we all destined for someone just give it time

Ase: Maybe you right

Me: I don't even know what to wear on the date

Ase: Wear your clothes, don't try to be something you not. Virgo liked you just the way you are angithi?

Me: Yes

Ase: So why do you wanna change yourself? Be the Aisha that you are

Me: You right.. You very right

Ase: I'm always right.. J ust give it a try and see you don't know this might be your future husband, just don't fall pregnant

Me: I would never girl!

We both laughed..

If it was Baya she would've given me 30 reasons why I shouldn't hang with Virgo and all those reasons would be bad. For Ase to be this warm, it meant a lot. Her not judging me and telling me that Virgo might wanna play me, telling me that I'm

beautiful. It was a first for me, all my previous friends have been very shitty hence I don't have a school friend that I still keep in contact with...

VIRGO SWARTBOOI

I was playing Fifa when my phone beeped.

I took it and checked, it was Aisha..

"I'd like to go out with you".

I paused the game and called her, she took forever to answer..

Me: I thought you fainted

She laughed..

Aisha: I was walking to my room

I checked the time..

Me: From where at this time? Boyfriend?

Aisha: I don't have a boyfriend

Me: How does a pretty thang like you not have a boyfriend?

Aisha: I don't know

Me: That's good for me then

Aisha: You don't have a girlfriend?

Me: I don't

Aisha: Don't lie, I'm sure you have tons of girls throwing themselves at you

Me: Yes I do have girls throwing themselves at me but I don't have a girlfriend

Aisha: I don't believe you

Me: Do you wanna keep my phone for a month?

She laughed..

Aisha: No!

Me: That's good because my Mother calls a lot

Aisha: Is she the one you were with during

registration?

Me: You were stalking me?

Aisha: No I just saw you

Me: Yeah that's my Queen

Aisha: She's beautiful

Me: I'll let her know

Aisha: Okay

Me: You arrive at school at what time?

Aisha: Early to eat breakfast at the cafeteria

My stomach turned at the sound of that

Me: How about I fetch you tomorrow morning from Res and we can have a proper breakfast

She went quiet..

Me: You still there?

Aisha: Uhm.. I have to go

Me: Tomorrow morning it is then.. Good night

She hung up...

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:52] : 10

AISHA

Virgo kept on pastering me last night with endless texts that we should go out for breakfast this morning before going to school. Our first class for today was English, it will start at 8am..

I waited at the entrance of the res, waiting for him...

He showed up at 7:30. I didn't even see him until he texted me that he's parked behind the Buses so I walked to his car..

I opened the door and got in the front seat

Virgo: Good morning

Me: Good morning

Virgo: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Virgo: I'm good

Virgo is always clean and neat, that type of clean that makes you wonder if your 30min shower was good enough..

Virgo: Where do you wanna eat?

Me: I don't know

Virgo: McDonald's?

Me: Yes I would like to go there

Virgo: Have you been there?

Me: J ust once

He chuckled..

Me: What?

Virgo: Nothing

We drove around he was looking for a McDonald's that was more satisfactory to him, and we found one..

I have only been here once and a long time ago, so I'm no longer familiar with the menu.

I had to order something, anything that I could be able to process, the Egg & cheese muffin seemed like something I could process so I got it. Virgo just got himself coffee...

Me: Breakfast is meant for 2 people

He looked at me..

Me: Seems weird when I have to eat alone

Virgo: I'm drinking coffee

Me: Coffee is not a meal

Virgo: I'm good

Do you know how difficult it is to eat when someone like Virgo is sitting across you? You have to mind the way you bite, the way you chew. Bite small portions, it was really difficult but he tried to not make me feel more uncomfortable by keeping busy with his phone..

I don't believe when he says he's single, he doesn't look single.. He looks like he could have more than just one girlfriend...

Me: I can get this as a takeaway seeing that we have to be in class soon

Virgo: One day of missing our English class won't kill, plus it's in the auditorium too crowded

Me: I know right

Virgo: At least when we start with our class next week, only our course

I nodded..

Me: Thank you for breakfast

Virgo: You welcome.. This weekend I'm choosing where we go

Me: Okay

He looked at me..

Me: What?

Virgo: It's nothing

I ate breakfast until I finished, then we drove to school. In the car we didn't say much to each other, I was busy with my phone..

We arrived at school, and it was time for our second

class. Anatomy, we got out of the car and made our way to the anatomy department..

The class was already seated as we entered, they all looked at us. We weren't that much late and the lecturer didn't seem to mind.

I sat with my squad, Virgo went to the back to sit with his friend Futhi..

Ase: Okay!! Anything you wanna tell us?

Me: Shhhhhhhh.. Lesson is on

We remained quiet..

We attended the classes until it was lunchtime.. We went to the cafeteria..

Me: I've never seen Virgo eating here

Ase and Po looked at each other..

Ase: You starting to like this guy don't you?

Me: Why?

Po: You've been talking about him almost the whole time

Me: I don't think so

Po: Yes you have

Me: Okay maybe I do like him a little

Ase: And it seems like he likes you too

Me: You think?

Ase: He took you out for breakfast, he's taking you out on Saturday

I blushed..

Ase: Hey now!!

Po: Probably we won't be climbing a bus anymore, we would be riding in a golf

Me: Po!!!

Po: Why have a rich boyfriend if you can't use him

Me: He's not my boyfriend

Po: For now

Me: Let's just eat you guys

We continued eating and just talking about random things..

Po: Do you think he's gifted down there?

Ase: Haaaa!

Po: What? Light skinned guys are said to be not packing down there

We laughed..

Me: That is wrong Po

Po: Guess we will find out soon

My phone vibrated on the table. I checked it was a whatsapp message from Virgo:

"Where are you? I miss you (sad face)"

I replied that I was at the cafeteria, he didn't reply..

VIRGO

Futhi was her loud mouth self, we were sitting in my car and I was eating lunch. Sushi, can't always drive out to town at times I'll have to bring my own. So I bought it yesterday.. She was eating a bunnychow, no wonder she's big as she is. Zero fucks given about her health and weight..

Futhi: You've never had ispahlo?

Me: Not in a long time

Futhi: Wanna try it?

Me: No.. It's dirty, unhealthy, and disgusting

Futhi: Ouch!.. Can I have your sushi a little just to taste?

Me: You are eating that thing and you wanna mix with sushi? Where have you ever heard that being

done?

Futhi: You could've just said No

Me: No

Futhi: You very rude

Me: Stop asking and saying dumb shit and I won't have to be rude

She clicked her tongue..

Futhi: I'm leaving

Me: Bye

Futhi: J erk!

Me: Don't drop your weight as you walk off

She banged my door..

Me: Don't bang things you can't afford!

She walked away..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:52] : 11

AISHA

I was starting to adapt to my new life at school. Leaving very early in the morning and coming back at 17:00 or so, then same procedure again the following day..

It's tiring I know but I had no choice, had to adapt because this is going to go on for a while..

After our last class, Virgo invited me over to his place for "Dinner". This guy is very bold!

Who does that? I might not have much experience in dating but I know when a guy invites you over, it's more than just a dinner date. There's Virgo when he's asking for something, then there's Virgo when he's seriously asking for something. He will annoy you until you give in, which makes me think that he has never been told No..

I informed Ase and Po about my whereabouts, so they know. They saw when I left with him, now what was left. Was to give them his flat No..

We passed at Wonderpark mall first, to get all the things he would need for the dish he was to prepare.. Never looked at the prices and bought where I wouldn't dream of buying for now... Also got a bottle of wine that was the most expensive out of all the wines..

We drove back to his flat, then I whatsapped Ase and Po giving them the flat number..

It was a bachelor's flat. A bed, flat screen TV, fridge, and other things. It wasn't crowded and it was clean..

Me: Your flat is beautiful

Virgo: Thank you

He had only one long couch..

Virgo: You can make yourself feel at home

Me: Thank you

I sat on the couch..

Virgo: I don't have a decoder, I don't really like DSTV

Me: Why?

Virgo: They repeat the same things and it's hella boring

Almost everyone likes DSTV, I'd watch until the morning comes. We don't really have it at home, can't really afford it..

Me: So what do you watch?

Virgo: I usually play games but if I feel like watching

something then I watch Netflix

Me: Okay

Virgo: Do you wanna watch it on my laptop or the big screen?

Me: Uhm..

Virgo: The big screen will require you to lie on the bed

Me: Laptop for now

Virgo: Okay

He went and got his laptop then accessed Netflix and handed it to me with earphones.

Me: A MacBook? Heard they costly

Virgo: 13k

Me: That's a lot of money I can't even afford the one for 4k at least

Virgo: You can watch while I prepare something

Me: You can cook?

Virgo: I only know one recipe

Me: Okay

He went to cook as I watched something, he suggested "The Big Bang Theory". It was nice and funny.. Though I did steal a couple of glances at him as he prepared the meal..

Who would've thought? That one day I would be in the presence of a guy that was never going to lay his eyes on me back in high school. This whole thing seemed way too good to be true and it was making me nervous...

He took a while to prepare the meal, when he was done. We sat around the small table centered in the middle just by the couch. We were sitting on the couch cushions and the table was centered on a mat..

The dish consisted of a steak, a sauce and green salad.. The sauce was a pepper steak sauce..

Me: You prepared the sauce too?

Virgo: No.. I bought it

Me: The food is nice

Virgo: Thank you

I fought through the fork and knife and he was getting through it like it was nothing..

The wine was very bitter.. After taking a sip I coughed..

Me: The wine is bitter

Virgo: Do you drink?

Me: No

Virgo: Is it your first time?

Me: No

Virgo: bitter wine as you call it, goes well with steak

Me: I'll pass on the wine

Virgo: At least mix it with juice, though I hate that

Me: Okay

Virgo: I'll get it

POZISWA "PO" (AISHA'S FRIEND)

Ase and I we were in the kitchen cooking. I was cooking chicken pieces and Pap, we'll eat together. We stay in the same floor so we usually together, we cook together and eat together..

Each dental student stays with a student doing Medicine, or BSc, Speech therapy, Physiotherapy, dietician, pharmacy, J ust different courses..

Ase and I we more closer than I am with Aisha only because we see each other a lot.

Me: I'm telling you

Ase: Kahle Po (wait a minute)

Me: I'm not saying that Aisha is not beautiful, but not too beautiful for Virgo. She's ordinary and dull, there way she dresses. Her upper body is much bigger than her lower body, big breasts she's not shaped nicely

Ase: That's not a nice thing to say about someone else

Me: I'm just saying nje, on the real.. Why would a guy like Virgo be doing with a girl like her? She's not his type.. I'm telling you he wants to smash and go, he got lost in her big cleavage and her lips. This girl is busy saying Nywe Nywe I only slept with one guy but I think she's lying. They don't know each other that well but there she is in his flat? Let's be real

she's a whore! Lihule! Yiskhekhe

Ase: It is kinda strange how she easily gave in to him, makes her seem loose. It's not even a month since we've been here and we all trying to find our way around and already she's doing this!

Po: That girl is loose you'll tell me one day when she's vomiting in the bathroom, actually I'm sure she's had multiple abortions you can see it in her eyes that uStout!

Ase: Hai finish so we can go and eat, I'm tired

AISHA

I helped him wash the dishes and as we conversing the conversation went Personal. I ended up telling him about what I went through, in my primary and high school years.. I think mixing wine with juice made me to tell more than I should..

Virgo: That's extreme, what you went through. You

really are a strong Person Aisha and I promise you
if I was at your school I'd fuck them all up

I chuckled..

Me: It's okay.. It was a long time ago

Virgo: Still.. Look on the bright side, I'm sure all of
them if most are not were you are today, I'm sure
some of them are raising unplanned kids or
sleeping around or even sick

Me: That's wrong.. Don't say such things

He squeezed my cheek..

Virgo: I think you really beautiful, it takes a real man
to see a woman's beauty ontop of that you have the
brains that makes you more beautiful

I blushed..

Me: Thank you

He walked closer to me, I froze. He put his hand under my chin and slowly leaned forward for a kiss. When he placed his lips on mine, I thought I was going to have a heart attack. I didn't think that kissing can be this spontaneous, seeing that I haven't dated for a while. We just kissed and kissed and kissed, giving me goosebumps and making my whole body cold..

As the kiss proceeded he wrapped his arm around my waist and pulled me more closer. I didn't know where to place my hands so I placed them on his chest, until he used his other hand to wrap one around his neck then my other hand followed..

His grip around my waist tightened, and he squeezed me more to him. It wasn't until his hand squeezed my breast that I stopped him

I remembered what happened with my last boyfriend, the smash and run..

Even when I broke the kiss he still forced...

Me: Stop

He stopped..

Virgo: I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to make you feel uncomfortable

Me: No it's okay I think I should go

Virgo: I'll drive you back

Me: Okay

He kissed me again...

Virgo: You were good company

Me: The food was nice

Virgo: Hoping we can do this again

Me: Ya maybe

Virgo: Let me get my car keys

Me: Let me get my things

What just happened??

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:53] : 12

AISHA

When he dropped me off at the flat, we kissed goodbye before he left. I don't know what was happening, I don't how real this was but it gave me butterflies in my tummy

He gave me butterflies in my tummy and made my knees weak. A guy like Virgo falling for me, I guess Impossible is really just a word..

I didn't even sleep, kept on thinking about the kiss. I

would toss and turn running my finger on my lips
with a shallow smile..

I was happy, I had a warm feeling in my chest

I kept on singing a song in my head repeatedly:

"Imagine me and you, and you for me

No matter how they roll the dice, it

Has to be.. The only one for me and you

And you for me, so happy together"

Varsity is very different from me, it's different from
my experience with primary and high school. It
seems as God's way of healing me from what I've
been through..

I've been praying for this, praying that once can

someone come my way. Someone who will see beauty in me, inside out. Someone who will love me for who I am, love me just the way I am..

The following morning I was all smiles to school, from the bus all the way to school.

More especially because he woke me up with a call, in his sleepy voice. He just called to say "Good morning". Who does that? That call made my day..

I was in class with my squad as always.

Po: So did you guys do it?

Me: No

Po: With all the smiling and blushing? Girl don't play us

Me: Okay we kissed

Po: J ust kissed?

Me: Yes

Po: Didn't lead you to bed? Nothing?

Me: Actually I stopped him before he went far

Po: You did? You stopped a whole entire Virgo? Girl
I would've laid in bed and opened my legs wide

I chuckled..

Po: Or kanjani Ase?

Ase: I don't know Po I'm just waiting for the
conversation to be done

Ase seemed uninterested in what we were talking
about, she was glued on her manual

Virgo walked in late as always, he's usually the last
one to walk into class..

I smiled and looked down, he passed and went to

sit at the back..

Po: Class romance

Me: Stop!

The lecturer came and we carried out the lesson, it was oral health.. I dared not to look back until the class was done..

When we were done and going for the next class, I noticed he was conversing with the other guys in class. It was good to see him making friends, male friends. I don't know what happened between him and Futhi, but I noticed some tension between them. Futhi wasn't even vocal as she used to be..

I was the last one to come out from our bench, I put my manual inside my beg when I felt someone bending my knees. I smelled his cologne, and felt his presence behind me

Virgo: Why am I being ignored again?

I looked around, almost everyone was gone.

I turned and looked at him..

Me: We were in class

Virgo: I walked in and you were staring down, I wanted to greet you

Me: We were in class

I looked away..

Virgo: Eventually you will have to stare me in the eye for more than 10 seconds

Me: You a nuisance

He kissed me..

I don't know what we doing, I don't if we dating or not..

Virgo: Can we do dinner together again?

Me: If I spend more time with you then I will neglect my school work

Virgo: You can bring over your work, we can study together

Me: I don't know Virgo

Virgo: I won't beg

Po: Aisha?? We'll be late for our next class

Me: We have to go

I tried moving but he blocked me..

Virgo: Dinner?

Me: Virgo.. We late for class

Virgo: Dinner? Or we not going to class

Me: Okay fine

He tried kissing me again but I looked the other way and the kiss landed on my cheek.

Po: Aisha!

Me: I have to go

Virgo: Tell her to stop calling you like that when you with me okay? If I do it, it will ruin her life

He pat me on the ass..

I took my bag and walked out, Ase was already gone..

Po: Girl?

Me: I'm sorry let's go

We went to the next class...

VIRGO

Aisha is a very sweet shy and Insecure girl. She's

not my type but at least she's clean you know. Very simple and very clean..

She has been through the most and with what she told me last night, I don't see her opening herself up to the world of dating.

She'll be a good sperm dish for now, I know for a fact she won't cheat. Good girl to have it raw with, and actually make her a sex addict..

It's been a minute since I had some action, her only being with one guy and having sex once which was a long time ago. I consider her a virgin, it's pure luck getting a girl that has been passed from one guy to the next.

She will worship me, she will forgive me. She's poor, Insecure, bitch trips over unnecessary things like DSTV, a Laptop, a meal I consider normal.. She

won't strain me financially, not that I can't afford a girl but she's not expensive. She considers useless things a luxury, things that are a no go for me

She eats at the cafeteria, I'm sure meals from there aren't that much expensive. She enjoys McDonald's and I bet her toiletries and hair maintenance can all amount to a mere R800 or so.. I just scored myself a sperm dish..

AISHA

Po: So Aisha here will have to make an appointment now if we wanna see her

Me: Stop it Po, it's not like that

Po: Girl you have him by his balls

I laughed.. I looked over at Ase..

Me: Are you okay? You awfully quiet today

Ase: J ust a headache nje

Me: Is it bad?

Ase: I'll be fine don't worry about it

We attended our morning classes up until lunchtime came, when we were about to make our way to the cafeteria. Virgo texted me that we should wait for him at the cafeteria, we shouldn't buy anything as yet.

We waited for him..

Po: he's running late and the cafeteria is getting full

Me: He'll be here

Po: Can we go in? You'll find us inside

Me: He said we should all wait here

She folded her arms and rolled her eyes..

Virgo showed up after 7min..

Virgo: Sorry to keep you ladies waiting

Po: It's okay we didn't wait for that long

That was strange, this girl was complaining.

Instead of buying food from the cafeteria, he bought us lunch at Galitos. There's Galitos too..

Po: I guess the wait was worth it

Virgo: You can order anything you guys want I'll pay

Me: Are you sure?

Virgo: Yes

That was nice of him and very strange..

I looked at the girls..

Me: So

Ase: I really don't know

Po: Let's decide before it gets full

Ase: I.. I really don't know

Po: Full chicken? Rolls? Chips? Drinks?

Me: Uhm.. I guess so

Ase: I think it's fine

Me: Okay I'll let him know

I turned back and looked at him, he was staring at his phone. I walked up to him.

Me: We have decided on what to order

He got up from the chair and we walked to the counter, with his hand around my waist.

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 21:53] : 13

AISHA

After classes I was walking to Virgo's car with Ase. Po left early, she didn't attend any classes after lunch..

Me: So what's happening with you? Today you've been a bit off

Ase: We all go through that one day, you know that bad day

Me: If you ever want to talk, know I'm here right?

Ase: I know

Me: I'll see you tomorrow

Ase: Okay bye

I watched her as she slowly walked to the Bus, then I went to Virgo's car..

Me: Hey

He yawned..

Me: Maybe I should just go to Res, seems like you are tired

Virgo: I'll be okay

We got in and he started driving..

Instead of eating at his place, he took me out. We went to some restaurant Skyline rooftop restaurant and bar, it was in Acardeia. Looked fancy and a place where I would just walk in and eat..

He opened the chair and I sat down, he sat across

me. I looked around, it wasn't full.

The tradition of the restaurant was carried out,
Menus and starting us off with drinks.

Me: This is beautiful, thank you so much

Virgo: You welcome, you can order anything you
want from the menu

I looked at the menu, then looked at him. He was
looking at me..

Me: Something wrong?

He closed his menu..

Virgo: Give me your hand

I stretched out my hand to him, he held it.

Virgo: One date, two dates, three dates.. How many
dates will it take for us to actually start dating?

I didn't know what to say..

Virgo: I know that your past relationship brought you pain

Me: I don't wanna be hurt

Virgo: I won't hurt you

I looked down..

Virgo: Just give us a chance, maybe a month or so if you don't feel comfortable or still unsure then you can walk away

I thought for a while..

Me: Okay.. We can try it out

He lifted my hand up and kissed it..

POZISWA

I heard a knock at my door..

Me: I'm coming

I walked over to open, it was Ase..

Me: Come in

She walked in..

Me: You guys just got back?

Ase: Sort off

Me: Okay I was thinking we shouldn't cook today

Ase: I need to talk to you about something

Me: Okay

Ase: When I was young and also in high school, they used to bully me a lot because of my skin colour. Called me a crockroach, black cat, kiwi shoe polish, ugly and all sorts of hurtful things

Me: Ohw I'm sorry to hear that

Ase: When you spoke about Aisha and how you body shamed her, it triggered something deep inside of me took me back

Me: I'm sorry

Ase: Please stop, Aisha is our friend and friends

don't do that to each other. Yes I did contribute to the gossip but when I thought of it, it's wrong and I don't wanna be a part of it

Me: I understand I'm truly sorry

Ase: Thank you.. I'll see you tomorrow

Me: Okay

I closed the door and rolled my eyes..

AISHA

I let him taste my food, he let me taste his.

Being in such a place, I had to take pictures. Such things aren't an everyday thing..

His phone rang..

Virgo: I have to take this, it's my Mom

Me: Okay

Virgo: Bomi... I'm good and you?.. Yes but now I'm eating out with my girlfriend

I looked at him.. He looked at me..

Virgo: Yeah I'll greet her.. Yes I'll ask her.. Okay we'll talk later.. I love you too

He hung up..

Virgo: My Mom says hi

Me: Okay

Virgo: She would like to meet you sometime

Me: I would like to meet her too

It's weird knowing that I'm now someone's "Girlfriend", someone like Virgo..

I had a great night with him, when we were done. He got me a takeaway then drove me to the Res, I didn't go with him to his flat.

Instead of going to my room, I went to Ase's room to see how she's holding up..

Me: Hey

Ase: Hey

Me: How are you feeling now?

Ase: Much better

Me: Brought you some food

Ase: You didn't have to

Me: I wanted to

Ase: Thank you

Me: You welcome

Ase: So tell me all about your date

I sat on the bed and started talking..

POZIS WA

Aisha had uploaded pictures on her Facebook and also whatsapp. Seemed like the restaurant was up class, even the food.

She was smiling through the photos..

How can she? Aisha get it on with a guy like Virgo? I am more beautiful than her..

This is a joke!! A bad joke!!

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:53] : 14

AISHA

[ONE MONTH LATER]

School was starting to get a bit straining. A lot was happening, we had assignments our mid year tests approaching, clinicals, Presentations.. It wasn't difficult just a lot of work.

My relationship with Virgo was also starting to pick up, we spend more time together and I enjoy his company a lot...

It was a Saturday morning and I was doing my laundry, Virgo will be coming to fetch me today for a sleep over. A month of dating without sex, I think

I've held it up good..

I feel today there's a possibility that we might do it, I mean a whole entire sleepover we are bound to do it..

Ase and I we are becoming more and more closer than I am with Po. Po has other friends apart from us, who made it to the same university just different courses so they usually party and club a lot. Ase and I, we really don't have previous people that we know who made it to our university. I also have this guy, he's gay and is getting more closer to us me because we are in the same group for our Oral health presentation...

I was doing my laundry with him, his name is Ngobizitha but we call him "Ngobi". He has friends, his gay squad. 2 are in the same varsity as us, different courses too. 2 are from TuT, he's known them for a while..

I like him, he's fun, friendly and very full of life

Nqobi: So Wednesday is presentation day

We got the topic of "Dental caries" mostly called "Tooth decay". Our presentation is next week Wednesday, with Virgo being the only one in our group who doesn't live with us I hope he will survive making a trip for our meeting starting from Monday evening..

Me: I think we going to kill it

Nqobi: We have you

I'm not the only smart hardworking person in class, as we all started getting comfortable with each other. We came to realize that there are others who are also as hardworking

Me: We will all work well, I believe in our group

We will all have to present a section of our topic, I'll be doing the classes.. Nqobi is going to compile all the slides, his creative brain is very valuable..

Me: I'm done

Nqobi: Almost done too

VIRGO

I was on a video call with my Mother..

Bomi: What do you need the money for?

Me: I want to take my Girlfriend out shopping tomorrow morning

Bomi: Why don't you use your allowance?

Me: She's not expensive Sweetheart, R2000 should cover it. I'll add on maybe a 1000, clothes and toiletries. I don't want her to taint my status

Bomi: Then why are you with her if you don't think she matches you?

Me: She's cheap

Bomi: Do you even love this girl?

Me: I like her a lot

She nodded..

Me: So?

Bomi: I'll send it

Me: Thank you very much

Bomi: How is school going?

Me: It's going good

Bomi: So long you pass, I'll do everything for you and your girlfriend.. That's the reward

Me: Beautiful

Bomi: When am I meeting him?

Me: We can come over next week weekend

Bomi: Sounds good, I miss you

Me: I miss you too.. Where you off too?

Bomi: To play golf

Me: With?

Bomi: A few associates

I know very well she is seeing someone.. I would take this further but I needed the 2k for now..

Me: Okay enjoy

Bomi: Okay I love you

Me: I love you too

I hung up and sent Aisha a text that I'm getting ready, she should too..

AISHA

When I got to my room I received a text from Virgo, letting me know that he's on his way.

I put the laundry basket in its place, changed and wrapped my body in a towel. Took my toilet bag and went to shower..

It was a 15min shower then I went back to the bedroom to get dressed. I put on my skinny Jean, sandals and a t-shirt. I only use an eyeliner and a lipstick, I'm not good with applying make up only because I don't know how to get it perfectly done. I sprayed my locks and tied them, then packed up an overnight bag..

Before leaving, I went to say Goodbye to Ase. She was in her room studying..

Me: It's early

Ase: Boredom

Me: I see

Ase: We meeting next week for the presentation?

Me: Yes

At least we were allowed to group ourselves.

Ase: Use condoms

I laughed..

Ase: Don't go back home with two qualifications

Me: I won't.. I'm nervous you know

Ase: About?

Me: Getting naked and everything, even used gynaeguard to make sure that my coochie doesn't disappoint. You know us women there's a lot that goes down there, I even used veet to shave the sensitive one

Ase: Yaa Maan you prepared yourself

Me: My bursary money came through so I was able to buy those and some good sexy PJs and underwears with matching bras

I'm meant to get 1500 monthly from the bursary as pocket money, they gave me a card where I get R500 a month to buy at Pick n pay. They gave me a book allowance and they'll be paying off my tuition fees. All that I have to do is just pass

They replaced my money for registration I only took R1000 then sent the rest home to my Mother and Sister. At least they don't have to send me money every month for food...

Ase and I talked until Virgo called that he's downstairs, I bid her Farewell and went down to him... I bumped into Po, she looked like shit..

Po: Going somewhere?

Me: Yes Virgo is picking me up

Po: You sneaky little thing

I laughed..

Me: Hangover?

She drank the coca cola in the can..

Po: You have no idea, just wanna go and sleep it off

Me: Do that

Po: See you when you get back friendship

Me: See you

We shared a hug..

Me: Bye

Po: Bye

I walked out to go and meet Virgo...

Me: Good morning

Virgo: Ms Pretty thang

We kissed..

Virgo: Looks like it's going to rain soon, there goes our picnic park plans

Me: Ya that's sad

Virgo: We can have the picnic in doors

Me: I think that's better

We drove out to get a few groceries. Things we needed for our indoor picnic since the weather was disappointing us..

We drove back to the flat..

We made our own hamburgers, I noticed that Virgo is very particular about what he eats. He doesn't like McDonald's, doesn't like KFC. He's a very picky

person, must be good for him. Getting what he wants without money being a strain, some of us can only wish for that...

Virgo: How were the hamburgers?

Me: Delicious

Virgo: I'm glad you liked the Burgers, maybe you can cook dinner for us tonight?

Me: I hardly think so.. You are very particular

Virgo: Anything.. I promise I will eat it

Me: Okay I'll try

I put the empty glass in the sink..

He got closer and kissed me..

Kisses are becoming a norm so they don't really scare me anymore, nor make me nervous.. We

continued kissing in the middle of the kitchen floor,
and he took off my t-shirt

Virgo: Are you sure about this?

I nodded..

Me: So long we use condoms

Virgo: I've done been having condoms for this
moment

I felt slightly uncomfortable with my big breasts on
display like that, they were being held firm by my
bra but still... I've gotten a lot of backlash from
people about my breasts.

He placed his hand on my cheek..

Virgo: You really are beautiful

I smiled a little as he kissed me again..

POZIS WA

I passed in my friend's room Alfredo. We went to the same high school, and same varsity now. She's doing a different course than me, she studying towards being a Dietician..

Last night we went out clubbing only came back this morning at around 4am.. The flats come to life in the morning, couldn't get a peaceful sleep..

Me: I'm sorry but did you see her? Did you see him?

Alf: I've seen them, she's not ugly though but for him she's definitely not his type. But it's not unusual, sometimes handsome guys fall for ugly girls

I got up from the bed, I was still in my yesterday's outfit. Blue denim shorts, a t-shirt but I had on sleepers instead of my boots.

Me: I mean look at me, everything corresponds
She chuckled..

Me: I don't care about her that much, but I will steal
him from her!

Alf: This is varsity

Me: This is varsity! What are you going to do

AISHA

I was naked in bed, laying on my back. He was
naked too. Not only does he have the looks but the
body too, Virgo is handsome in all departments.
One of the people that were blessed by God..

I don't know much about dicks and how big they
should be, but Po and them are definitely lying

about light skinned guys having small dicks, it wasn't at all small.

He was ontop of me, in between my legs. His fingers played around my clit, he did that whilst sucking on my nipple.. I have stretch marks, a bit of some two toned skin here and there, a bit of some dark colour in between my thighs and he didn't care about that..

He was exploring and embracing my body that it made me relax, made me to trust him with with my body..

Virgo: Is it nice?

I nodded repeatedly enjoying the pleasure running throughout my body..

He took the pack of condoms and got one from it, then rolled it down on himself..

He kissed me again and rubbed the tip against my vaginal opening..

He moved down and planted wet kisses on my neck moving down to my tummy and further on moving down to my coochie. He placed his hands on my thighs, on the sides and kissed my shaved coochie then I felt his lips on my clit. I felt his tongue running down from there to the opening of my coochie..

He ate me out, I feel like this is going to be the best part about having sex..

I placed my hand at the back of his head..

Me: Ohhh Virgo

He continued until he sucked my clit with his middle

finger deep inside of me. It wasn't as painful as I thought it would, it was very nice

I was enjoying every part of it, every part of what he was doing. His tight grip on my thighs, giving no care on the imperfections of my body.. He stopped and knelt on the bed, pulled me closer to him I helped by going down more closer to him. He looked at me and grabbed his dick, then he slowly inserted it in..

Me: Ahhhhh!!!

Virgo: Sorry

He further on pushed deep inside.. I placed my hand on his the one that still had a grip on my thigh.. He pressed in harder..

Me: Virgo!!!!

He pushed in until he was fully inside and it stung, he placed his other hand on my other thigh and

started pumping in and out..

It was painful at first, but not so painful to actually stop him. Grabbed both my hands and held them tight as he kept on pumping, as I moaned..

Me: Vir... Virgo..

Virgo: Baby..

I was actually doing this, having sex with a guy that only existed in my fantasies..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:54] : 15

AISHA

I have never had this much sex even with my Ex the one who broke my virginity. Virgo just wanted to keep on going, after the first round we rested. The second round took a bit longer than the first round. The 3rd round, which is this round. I was very sore and in pain, the condom was making it worse so we opted not to use it.. He told me that we will get pills later on if there's a pharmacy that will still be open, or alternatively get tomorrow morning..

He enjoyed this round more than he did with the other two. I was still sore, but the pain was bearable compared to the first two rounds.. This time around it was a woman ontop. He was laid back and I was ontop of him. This position is uncomfortable, wonder how girls manage to tolerate it..

He made it less draining by fondling with my breasts as I was ontop of him. He also help hold them in place, since I wasn't wearing a bra it was difficult to keep them in place..

I was tired, I wanted to rest so I was praying he comes already...

I put my hands ontop of his and continued pumping, my moans and screams only got louder when I went up and down more faster.

His moans too clearly indicated that he was also enjoying it, more than I thought..

Virgo: Shit you going to make me cum!

I continued going up and down on him, until he held my waist and quickly threw me on the side. He slipped out and got grabbed his dick more tighter, then jerked himself off right on my tummy. Some of his cum landed on my chin. He jerked off until there was nothing that was coming out, then he let go and took a deep breath.. I took the towel and wiped off my tummy.. He pulled me closer to him and I

laid my head on his chest..

POZIS WA

I was woken up by a phone call, I checked and I didn't recognize the number..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Hi.. Is this Po?

Me: Yes? Who is this?

Voice: It's Abel, remember we met last night at Channel M?

Me: Abel? Abel? Abel?

Abel: I bought you and your friends drinks remember?

Me: Ohw yes I remember

Abel: We going back tonight, don't know we should stop by and fetch you guys?

Me: Uhm what time?

Abel: 19:00?

Me: Okay we will be ready

Abel: Okay bye

Me: Bye

I don't really remember him but I have a serious Hangover, I need a few to cure my Hangover. I have never turn down free alcohol..

AISHA

I woke up from my peaceful sleep to the sound of something being fried.. I glanced over on my side and the bed was empty.

I lifted my head up from the pillow and looked over, Virgo was in the kitchen standing at the stove

cooking. He was even whistling. I got out of bed and wrapped the towel around my body, then I made my way to him..

Me: Hey

He looked at me..

Me: When did you wake up?

Virgo: An hour before you, and showered

Me: For how long have we been sleeping?

He kissed me on my forehead..

Virgo: Long enough

I yawned..

Virgo: Wanna sleep again?

Me: If I sleep now I won't sleep later on

Virgo: How about then you go and shower, then I'll finish preparing dinner

Me: Okay

He kissed me on my forehead again..

I walked away, he pulled me to him and kissed me on my cheek..

Me: I really need to shower, I feel sticky

Virgo: I should've woken you up to shower with me

Me: You didn't.. So I'll have to go and shower

I walked to the bathroom...

POZISWA

I prepared myself for the night, I will be bringing condoms just for incase. I know these guys, they don't just buy you alcohol and leave it there.. They buy you alcohol and wanna hit it. I'll be also hustling him money, I have to get out with at least R1000..

I am wild, I have a reputation back at home. My passing my matric circled around dating teachers who made things happen. People called me all sorts of names but at the end my whoring self ended up in varsity..

My matric certificate some subjects I don't know how I passed. Like mathematics and physical sciences, together with geography and life sciences. I don't know how they managed to pull it off, but I got level 4s.

I'm just happy that I'm here, and varsity doesn't seem so difficult just a lot of studying in a short space of time...

AISHA

I got out of the shower and went to put on my PJ s. Short PJ pants and a matching PJ spaghetti top.

Very flowery and I like how the top held my breasts. My boobs filled it up at the front.. It's black white PJ s, with pink&black flowers with pink sleepers..

Virgo looked at me as I got dressed, just standing there with his arms folded. Made me feel a bit uncomfortable being naked around him..

When I was done he still looked at me without saying a word..

Virgo: Dinner is ready

Me: I'll help you plate

I walked over to help him.. He had prepared chicken breasts, stir fry and rolls. I like how he did the stir fry, it looked appetizing..

I dished the stir fry and he stood behind me hugging

me from the back, he kissed me at the back of my neck and then snuck in his tongue in my ear.. I leaned to the back..

Me: Stop it!

Virgo: What? I'm addicted to you

He was behaving like a sick puppy..

Me: Stop I wanna eat, I'm hungry

He moved his hands up to my boobs..

Virgo: I don't mind having you for dinner again

He squeezed my breasts..

Me: Can we eat? Real food.. I'm really hungry

Virgo: Okay.. We can eat, real food

Me: Thank you!

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:54] : 16

VIRGO

Aisha was fast asleep and I was laying next to her staring at her as she slept..

I leaned over and kissed her cheek.

Credit needs to be given where it's due, Sex with Aisha was amazing. I don't know if it's because it has been a while since I was last intimate with a woman, seeing I've been single for a while or she was just enjoyable. The type of sex that will definitely make you take her to your mother and start Lobola negotiations.. Especially when we didn't use a condom, it was amazing..

I took a picture of her and just saved it on my phone.. She's been very amazing, would make me cashrupt my allowance in one go.

Aisha is not really ugly, if she was financial stable enough to get her own. She would bang, she's just way too simple and I'm starting not to mind that because then I wouldn't have to deal with a lot of niggas...

POZISWA

We didn't go to Channel M, they took us somewhere else. It was Me, Abel, and my Friend Alf. They got us a 12 savannas and got themselves beers..

It'll be difficult getting money from this guy because he's using a card. Now I'll have to improvise, go home with him and sleep with him to make him go

and withdraw money.

He's ugly no doubt about that, though he's ugly but his money is not ugly and that's the mission. A girl's gotta survive, I need new clothes, I need new things. I have to keep my image beautiful at all times to attract more guys with loaded wallets..

I don't come from a well financial background, so if school doesn't workout I have to settle for a well stable guy. I can't go home defeated by school and show up with nothing, I'll be a joke...

AISHA

I woke up from my peaceful sleep at around 12am, Virgo was sleeping. The flat was dark, he had his arm across me..

I looked at him in darkness and smiled, maybe this might just work. Maybe this might just be my true relationship, my first true love. Who said God doesn't answer prayers? Who said God doesn't give you the best after you've been through pain? I'm a living proof of that. I got school going on and now I have a good relationship going on..

I laid my head back on the pillow..

POZISWA

After our wild night, I did go with Abel to his place. Alf went back to Res..

I expected this, he was renting a backroom in Ga-rankuwa zone 3. A small back room..

I was drunk when we slept together, but I did make

sure a condom was used..

It was 10:00am when I woke up with a terrible hangover, I didn't bath. I just washed my face and rinsed my mouth since he was taking me to town for a meal. Hoping when we get there he will give me some money.

Abel: I can't eat with you I'll just drop you off and then leave

Me: Why?

Abel: I have to go and check up on my Daughter, my Baby Mama sent me a text message last night

Me: I understand

He took out R150 from his wallet..

Abel: I'm sure this will cover the meal

I looked at it, only R150?

Me: Can't you give me more? I've ran out of groceries

Abel: I don't have more

Me: Please

Abel: I've been buying you alcohol since from Friday night with your friend, some of the money went there.. Alcohol is expensive

What a stingy prick!!

Me: It's okay.. Thank you

Can't believe I slept with him for R150, I have to up my game..

AISHA

We woke up this morning and prepared to go out, before preparing we had one steamy session...

We started at the pharmacy to get the pill, I had to fill out a questionnaire before they could sell it to me. Found it a bit embarrassing knowing that The Pharmacist now knows I had unprotected sex last night.

I got the pill and drank it right away, praying that it will do what it's meant to do..

If I show up pregnant at home, my Mother is going to be gravely disappointed. Can't do that to my family nor myself. A baby is not part of the plan..

After getting the pill, he took me out shopping for clothes. We went to Identity.

I've never worn clothes from this clothing shop, they expensive. The budget was R2500.. He was holding my hand as we looked around..

Me: You really didn't have to do this

Virgo: I wanted too.. You deserve the best

He kissed my hand..

My phone rang, it was my Sister..

Me: I have to take this

I moved away and answered the call..

Sis: It's been hard trying to reach you, I've been trying to reach you since from yesterday

Me: I know.. I'm sorry

Sis: What happened? Thought weekends were less

chaotic

I looked at Virgo..

Me: I was busy

Sis: With what?

Me: Don't scream, don't freak out.. I have a boyfriend

Sis: What??

Me: His name is Virgo, same guy that we saw the other day remember? During registration the one that was walking with that beautiful woman and we thought all kinds of things?

She laughed..

Sis: Yeah right, nice one

Me: I'm being for real

Sis: Wait.. You really serious?

Me: I'm with him right now and we doing shopping

Sis: I don't understand.. How did this happen again?

Me: Long story.. I'll let you know later when I go back to Res

Sis: Aisha I don't mean to sound somehow but I'm worried

Me: About?

Sis: Have you slept with him?

I kept quiet..

Sis: You did!

Me: I mean we are dating after all

Sis: Aisha such guys can't be trusted, really handsome guys can't be trusted. I'm worried that you might get hurt and you know when you get hurt, it might even affect you academically. I'm not saying you can't attract handsome guys but..

She sighed..

Sis: I don't trust him fully, I'm sorry.. I don't see that guy Single he probably has a girlfriend back at home and now he's just trying to score with you as

his temporary thing until he sees her again

Me: Ohw

Sis: You have to be very smart when it comes to boys, you don't have much experience and you might yourself in a very messy situation. Please be careful that's all I'm asking

Me: Okay

Sis: I'll talk to you later, I love you

Me: I love you too

I hung up. That was a bit offensive, made it seem like I'm worth setting or dating ordinary guys that I'm not good enough for a guy like Virgo. Maybe she's right but he's with me.

I walked back to him and faked a smile then we continued with the shopping...

It was difficult going through shopping with what my Sister said to me. I had all kinds of questions running through my mind..

When we were done getting a few clothes, we went out to eat..

Virgo: Are you okay? You don't seem like yourself all of a sudden

Me: I'm fine

Virgo: If you worried about the morning after pill working, the Pharmacist said th-

Me: Do you love me?

He looked at me..

Me: Are you with me because you wanna be with me or you just pushing time with me?

Virgo: Where is that coming from now?

Me: I just wanna make sure that you with me because you wanna be with me, and that tomorrow

I won't wake up with a broken heart

Virgo: I understand that you've been through a lot but this pity party has to stop now, it was years ago Aisha. If you don't feel like you not good enough for me then why did you agree to us? To this?

Me: I'm just asking

Virgo: You asking shit! I don't wanna be with someone where I'll always have to suffer for the sins of people who didn't treat her right, someone who always look down on herself. I don't wanna be in a depressing relationship, I am with you because I wanna be with you. Because yesterday we connected deeply, but one thing I won't do is always having to prove myself to you that I won't hurt you. Stop acting like a kid! Almost everyone went through some sort of bullying once when they were young, we suck it up and move on! You older now and I bet those people are old too, to be wasting their time busy bullying you. People grow up! Grow up too!

I didn't expect that from him, that was a mouthful and he seemed irritated..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:54] : 17

AISHA

My statement really got to Virgo. It irritated him to the core, what was meant to be a good day for us turned sour. I even regreted asking that because even when I tried to talk to him, he just gave me one word answers. To show me that he was still irritated..

We got back to the flat and I put the plastic from Identity on the couch. He had also bought me snacks for when I go back to Res.

He went and got himself a glass of water. I followed him..

Me: I'm sorry if what I asked offended you, I shouldn't have brought that up. You haven't given me any reason to feel that type of way, I'm sorry

He placed the glass in the sink, still had his back turned against me..

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm really sorry

He turned and looked at me..

Virgo: I just need to know that if we continue with our relationship, the past won't be the reason that we'll always fight

Me: I promise

Virgo: It's difficult being in a relationship with someone who is Insecure, it makes the relationship draining

I nodded...

Me: I understand

Virgo: Come here

I walked up to him, he held both my hands.

Virgo: You asked me if I love you, I think I am falling for you.. I hope you feel the same way too

Me: I do

He pulled me over to him and kissed me, he wrapped his hands around my waist and squeezed it...

What was meant to be a makeup kiss, ended me up on the counter. I was still sore from all the sex we had last night, but the enjoyment of it made me to want it more..

Since a condom hurts me, we decided to hit it raw again. Hoping at the pharmacy they won't come for my life when we go back there again in hopes of

getting another morning after pill.. It's this how girls fall pregnant? You just want more of it despite the repercussions..

When he was inside it was a bit better, the pain was all better..

He pumped in and out whilst rubbing my clit with his thumb, it made it more nicer...

POZISWA

I heard a knock at the door, I ignored but it didn't go away.. I got out of bed and went to open, it was Ase. I let her in..

Ase: Hey

Me: Hi.. What time is it?

Ase: It's 12:00 in the afternoon

I went and threw myself on the bed..

Ase: You went out last night?

Me: Yes

Ase: Ohw

Me: I don't mean to be rude but I'm very tired

I've seen that Ase and Aisha are starting to get very close. When her "Best friend" is not around and she gets bored, she comes here.

I am not anyone's second choice..

Ase: I guess I'll leave you then

Me: Thank you

She walked out...

I went to lock the door behind her...

AISHA

After our session I went to shower again, we actually showered together. I felt a bit comfortable with him, showing him my nakedness. He has made me feel comfortable..

After showering I packed up my things..

I felt a bit sad having to leave after the great time that we had, I had a great weekend I won't lie..

He drove me back to Res, I was able to snap a few pics of him driving and upload them on my whatsapp status and on Facebook..

Virgo: Stop it, it's distracting

Me: Don't be that Person

We searched for another pharmacy where we could get a morning after pill and I ended up getting Oralcorn. It's a birth control pill, so long I take it precisely at the same time everyday then I'll be okay. I sent an alarm clock right away, I'll take the pill every morning at 7am..

He parked at the Res..

Me: Thank you

Virgo: You don't have to thank me for everything even necessary things

Me: I was taught to show appreciation at all times

Virgo: You were raised well

I leaned over and kissed him..

Virgo: I'll call you later when I have gotten my needed rest

Me: Okay

Virgo: I love you

That came as a shock.

Me: I love you too

I got out and took my things from the backseats and then watched him driving off.

POZIS WA

After Ase disturbed my sleep, it was difficult to sleep again. I decided to go to the shop next door. Buy myself slab chips, bread, Russian and cool drink..

I bumped into Aisha at the stairs. She was all smiles, holding a plastic from Identity and a bag..

Me: Hey

Aisha: Hey

Me: You just getting back?

Aisha: Yes

Me: Then you will have to tell me all about it later, I'll come to your room

Aisha: Okay no problem.. Is Ase around?

Me: Yes.. She's in her room

Aisha: Okay

Me: See you later

Aisha: Later it is

She continued walking to her room...

VIRGO

After dropping off Aisha, I drove back to the flat..

How she responded earlier to what I did gave me assurance that I'll be easy to control her.

Yes it was irritating but she was just laying out her concerns, my rudeness didn't put her off completely. She ended up begging and offering herself sexually, that's what I want.

I wanted her to be so stuck to me that no matter what I do she never leaves..

I'm a very difficult Person to deal with, I've lost a relationship because she couldn't deal with me.. Though I'm a Jerk but I do fall in love, and when she leaves. I end up broken hearted, so Aisha. I don't think she's going to leave, I don't want her too.. I've got myself a good and well reserved girl, I don't wanna let her go..

AISHA

When I got to my room, I called my Mother. It's been a while since I last spoke to her.

I'm not going to tell her about Virgo just as yet until I'm sure where Virgo and I truly stand.. It's too early to let her know and I don't know how she's going to feel about me having a boyfriend. She might be okay with it, at the same time she might not be okay with it..

Ma: Your Aunty passed on, Aunt Mami

Me: That's bad, that's really bad

Ma: I'm from there she passed on last night, they preparing.. Cleaning the house

Me: That's sad..

Ma: She's been sick for too long though

Me: That's true

Ma: Uphumilile (she's resting)

Me: That's true

Ma: Kuwe.. Kuhamba njani? (how is it going with you)

Me: It's going well Ma.. Can't complain

Ma: That's good.. I'm glad you finding your way

Me: I was scared ukuthi I wouldn't fit in but with how things are going, varsity is not bad. Might be my favorite

Ma: I'm glad to hear that, don't forget to pray

Me: I won't

Ma: Let me start cooking, I didn't cook this morning.. I went to Aunt Mami's place early

Me: Okay we'll talk tomorrow

Ma: Okay Sisi

Me: Bye

Ma: Bye

VIRGO

When I got to the flat I called my Mother..

Ma: You are calling me? It's usually the other way around

Me: It's good talking to you too

Ma: How are you Baby?

Me: I'm good.. Actually I'm calling to find out where you put my old laptop

Ma: It's in my bedroom, I have been saying I'll give it away I keep on forgetting

Me: Don't give it away.. I wanna give it to my girlfriend

Ma: Hmmmm you really are going all out for this girl

Me: J ust trying to be a good boyfriend

Ma: So it is official?

Me: Yes

Ma: I can't wait to meet her next week

Me: We will come

Ma: Okay baby.. I love you

Me: I love you too

AISHA

I texted Virgo asking him if he has arrived, whilst walking to Ase's room..

I knocked..

She opened after a while..

Me: Hi.. Hope you not busy

Ase: Not at all.. Please come in

I walked in holding two packets of chips.

Ase: You back already

Me: Yes

Ase: It's good to see you

Me: Me too

I sat on her bed..

Me: What's been happening?

Ase: Nothing much, just watching my favorite series

Me: You and Po didn't link up?

Ase: No she was out with her other friends drinking all weekend, tried going to her a few hours ago and she switched me off

Me: That's not nice

Ase: I don't think I like her

Me: She is weird

Ase: But enough about her, let's talk about your weekend.. How did it go?

Me: Come let's talk over snacks

She came and sat next to me..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:54] : 18

AISHA

A FEW DAYS LATER

The week went by faster than I anticipated, maybe it's because we spent most of our time at school and busy with school work.

Before we knew it, we were back to the weekend. Virgo and I decided to skip our afternoon class and headed exactly to his home. He lives in Northcliff, it'll be my very first time being in such an area and in the company of well off people. It still puzzles me how Virgo chose me out of all the girls that he could

be with..

We drove in at his house, the waterfall fountain situated in the middle took my breath away. His house is beautiful on the outside, it must be more beautiful inside.

We got off the car and he was holding my bag and I was holding his other free hand.

Me: Your house is beautiful

Virgo: Thank you

We made our way in, and it was quiet. It was very clean and it wasn't overcrowded with furniture. The kitchen was empty in a good way. Open space in the middle and an all around black cupboard..

Virgo: Welcome to my home

Me: It's very beautiful

Virgo: Thank you

We proceeded to his room upstairs..

Virgo: We'll be sleeping in here

Me: It's also beautiful

Virgo: Thank you.. My Mom must be at work

Me: What does she do?

Virgo: She's into agriculture, has her own company

Me: A hardworking woman, I'm inspired she sounds like a very admirable Person

Virgo: Yeah something like that

I nodded..

Virgo: Let's go have lunch next to the pool

Me: Okay I'd like that

I changed my shoes into flops so I could more

comfortable then we went back to the kitchen to prepare lunch..

Virgo: Our helper knocks off early on Friday

He looked at the time.. It's 15:00, she knocked off at 14:00..

Me: This is inspiring, this has inspired me to work more harder at school to afford myself a comfortable life one day

Virgo: You will, you very smart and I'd be a fool to not marry such an ambitious woman, you will meet my Mother later on. Don't let her talking too much intimidate you

Me: I am nervous do you think she will like me?

Virgo: She won't like you, she's going to love you

I smiled..

We prepared food. Toasted sandwiches, oven chips and drinks. Then we went outside to eat by the pool. There were chairs, a table, and an umbrella. The pool was clean, blue waters..

Virgo: You can swim tomorrow, the weather is welcoming

Me: I definitely will

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I looked at Virgo's pictures on Instagram, he's now in Varsity and has a girlfriend already.

He posted a picture of her sleeping about a few days ago. I swallowed as my heartbeat picked up..

My Mother walked in..

Ma: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Ma: How is the baby?

I placed my hand on my tummy..

Me: He's good

My Mother works at the local hospital as a cleaner..

I live with my Mother and my younger Brother, my Older sister is married but unemployed. Her husband is not rich but they getting by..

We were once a very close knitted family, until my Parents divorced and my Father re-married. He stopped taking care of us leaving everything on the shoulders of my Mother. My Mother took care of us alone and she did a pretty good job. My little Brother is in Grade 11, My Sister is at least married and I was meant to be in varsity this year until the pregnancy happened and ruined everything.

My Mother is very strict and she went 3 months without talking to me, even threatened to kick me

out. She insulted me day and night until she found out who the father of my baby is..

The thing is, I don't know who the Father of my baby is. At the same time I was dating Virgo I was involved with another guy. This other guy I had to side line him because he's useless my Mother was never going to accept him. I had to say Virgo is the Father because he comes from a well stable background..

Ma: You are 6 months pregnant now, don't you think it's time we let him and his family know?

Virgo and I broke up 2 weeks before I found out that I was pregnant. I met him at some party in the suburbs, I had a friend who was about the good life and used to take me to high class parties. That's how I met Virgo, through her..

Ma: The baby will be born soon, we have to tell them

I nodded..

Me: I will inform him

Ma: No.. We will go to his house and inform them

I swallowed..

Ma: It's only fair

Me: Okay

Ma: When you told me about him and showed me him, there's no doubt that he comes from a well off family. They will help with the baby and you can go back to school next year, they might even pay your fees

I nodded..

Ma: At least you didn't just fall pregnant by a useless someone, there's still hope for you

I nodded..

Me: Yes Ma

Virgo doesn't know that I come from humble beginnings, my Mother afforded us an acceptable life one that didn't make us look poor in the world. I dressed well, she sacrificed too much for us. With my beauty too, Virgo just fell in love with me...

AISHA

After our lunch, I went back inside and took a tour of the house. They even had a bar and a TV room. A very big flat screen TV, comfortable couches, snacks and drinks.

It wasn't something big just a room that could be a size of a living room, just that they made it a TV room. I took pictures of the TV room, kitchen, bar area and the bathrooms.

I sent my sister, she called right away..

Sis: Are you in Connie Ferguson's house?

I laughed..

Sis: Their house is beautiful

Me: I'm telling you!

Sis: These people are rich

Me: And it seems like his Mother is doing it all alone because he hasn't mentioned his father

Sis: Wow

Me: It's inspiring! I'm inspired! She's an inspiration, I really wish this for my life some day. This just made me wanna work hard more

Sis: Can a dental therapist qualification give you that life? I highly doubt

Me: I'm not going to be a dental therapist forever, I'm going to do BDS. Bachelor of Dental surgery

Sis: Ohw okay at least, do we fit in, in your fantasy? You don't mention Mom and I

Me: Don't be like that

Sis: I'm just asking hau

Me: I have to go, we will talk later

Sis: okay bye

Me: Bye

VIRGO

I was still sitting by the pool smoking when I noticed that I had a DM on Instagram. I checked, and it was from my ex girlfriend Ketso..

"We need to talk, it's important please"

I clicked my tongue and blocked her..

Ketso dumped me 6 months ago and said she wanted nothing to do with me anymore, I don't understand why she's in my DMs now.

She's probably doing this because she saw the picture of Aisha that I uploaded..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:54] : 19

AISHA

Virgo's Mom finally came back home. By now, I had forced Virgo that we should prepare dinner. I find it unfair for his Mother to come back home after a long day's work and prepare dinner, moreover since the helper knocked off early... I know how to prepare basic dishes, dishes that cater to the low class. This family look like people who eat dishes prepared by a chef, I've noticed how Virgo prepares food. A mere chicken stew isn't mere to them, they will turn it into a 5 star hotel meal...

At least we were preparing from one of the cookbooks that they had in the kitchen...

Seeing Bomi this upclose, she's very beautiful. Even the way she wears made me to admire her even more..

Bomi: It's finally good to meet you Aisha

Me: Me too

She looked around..

Bomi: Ludwe is cooking?

Me: I.. I thought we should prepare dinner

She put her bag on the counter, car keys, and phone..

Me: I'm sorry if I crossed the line

Bomi: No.. Not at all, I'm just.. We usually order in or drive out to eat in a restaurant when our helper is off.. This is.. This is impressive

Virgo: Don't get used to it

Bomi: I think I'm going to like you

Virgo: Now I'm scared

Bomi: Let me go and freshen up so that I can taste the food

She walked away..

Bomi: Thank you Aisha

Me: It was nothing

I watched her as she walked away..

Me: She seems nice

Virgo: Not everything is at it seems

Me: What do you mean?

Virgo: Nothing.. You can take the plates to the dining table

Me: Okay

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Ma: Here.. Your Sister wants to talk to you

I took the phone..

Me: Sepati

Sepati: Mom tells me that you guys will go to the baby Daddy's house soon

Me: Yes

Sepati: Are you sure it's his child?

Me: Yes

Sepati: I don't want Mom getting there and he says something different and we get embarrassed, moreover I don't want her BP to spike up because of you. I still need her

Me: It's him

Sepati: Why did it take you so long Kets o to talk?

Me: I told you that we broke up and I didn't know how to tell him

Sepati: Why didn't you abort? Have you thought how he's going to feel when you just show up pregnant? Do you know how boys are?

Me: I'm sorry

Sepati: Sorry? How will your sorry rectify this problem? You brought this on yourself maan! Now you saying Nyori Nyori?

Me: We will go to his house

Sepati: What were you even thinking? Bringing us such humiliation? You know how Mom used to brag about you going to varsity this year? Now you are no different from all the useless cousins we always talk about! You have become that useless cousin now

I closed my eyes and swallowed..

Me: I didn't mean to be such a burden and useless to the family

Sepati: Aghaaa maan!

She hung up..

AISHA

We gathered around the dinner table to it, just the 3 of us..

I didn't notice any ring in her finger, how is such a beautiful independent woman not married? What happened to Virgo's Father?

Bomi: This is delicious, this is very delicious

Me: Thank you

Bomi: You guys copied from one of the cookbooks?

Me: Exactly as how it was written, we followed all the instructions

Bomi: It's delicious

(Silence)

Bomi: Aisha maybe tomorrow morning we can go

out and you can tell me more about yourself, just the two of us

Me: Uhm...

Virgo: Am I going to lose my girlfriend?

Bomi: Jealous are we?

Virgo: I just wanna know what's going to happen to me when you two get really close

Bomi: Aisha is worth knowing, I like her already

Virgo: I'm really scared

Me: I'd love too

I was only saying that because it would seem rude to say No...

Bomi: How is school going?

Virgo: It's a lot of work but we getting through

Me: The modules are not difficult just a lot of work

Bomi: Is Dental Therapy the end game?

Me: I was actually thinking of doing BDS, I wanna do it

Bomi: That's good.. Virgo?

Virgo: I don't know Bomi, I'm just waiting for the conversation to be over

He calls his Mother by her name? My Mother would kill me..

Bomi: I'm just glad that you settling in well at school, I was worried he wouldn't fit in

Me: You were?

Bomi: We talking about Ludwe here, everything is not good enough for him

Me: It's a good school no lie

Bomi: It seems that way

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I didn't give my Mother back her phone immediately. I saved Virgo's numbers and sent him a whatsapp text:

"It's Ketso.

I had to text you using my Mother's phone since we blocked each other on whatsapp.

I wanted to talk to you because I'm pregnant, I'm 6 months pregnant. I didn't know how to tell you, seeing how we separated.

I'm really scared, I didn't sign up for this Virgo. I'm depressed and confused, please call me "

I sent the message and deleted the conversation together with his number....

AISHA

We were just talking about general things as we went through dinner. Virgo's phone beeped..

Bomi: That's rude

Virgo: Your phone rings all the time

Bomi: It has too.. I'm a working woman

Virgo: I'm an important Person

He got it and checked, he looked at the screen for a while..

Bomi: Ludwe!

It's like he didn't hear her..

Bomi: Virgo!!

He looked at us..

Virgo: Please excuse me

He got up and walked away..

Bomi: What was that all about?

Me: I'm not sure

VIRGO

I walked upstairs to my room with my heart beating fast. It can't be, she can't be pregnant with my child.. I refuse!

I unblocked her on whats app, then I saved her number again..

I texted her not on whats app though..

"What do you mean you fucken pregnant?"

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:55] : 20

AISHA

Indeed the next morning Bomi took me out for a "getting to know each other" time away from home...

We went to this Lodge that had a beauty spa to get pampered. I've only seen this on social media, people doing this so it's my first time doing this and it seems relaxing..

We were laying on the stretcher beds on our tummies as they massaged our backs..

It was soothing, felt some pain on my shoulders of tension being released..

I wonder how much this costs, it's on my bucket list from hereon to do it every year when I start generating my own money..

Bomi: How does it feel?

Me: It's relaxing

Bomi: Relieves all the stress and tension that you guys get from school

Me: That's very true.. Thank you again

Bomi: Anytime

(Silence)

Bomi: So where you from?

Me: From Soweto

Bomi: How is life there?

Me: It's okay, and ordinary

Bomi: Family?

Me: My father passed on when I was young, I am

left with my Mother and my Sister. My Sister is working in retail and my Mother is unemployed

Bomi: Where you come from doesn't determine your success.. It's always where you going that's more important, I come from Eastern Cape, if one told me that a village girl would one day be this successful I would've disagreed

Me: You are a true inspiration

Bomi: Not all is at it seems, I have my shortcomings but I didn't let my mistakes prevent me from becoming who I wanted to be. Same as you, don't let anyone stand in your way of success. Not even Virgo, you are the most important Person in your life right now. Your education is currently one thing that will never disappoint you, nothing and no one comes first right now other than your education

Me: That's very true

Bomi: It's the very first time that my Son is involved with someone ambitious, all along he's been dating gold diggers. I never liked any of them.. I despise a woman who is dependent on a man, because even

when he plays you.. You don't have anywhere to go, you stuck with him. You don't have anything to fall back on.. Team Vagina is very destructive they the ones who mostly go for the other woman when the man cheats, forgetting that the other woman owes you nothing! When you have your own, even when a man starts changing you know that you can continue with your life.. Don't be in a situation where you need a man, want a man

Me: That is very profound, thank you

VIRGO

I called Ketso..

Ketso: Hello

Me: Ketso

She paused..

Me: Ketso!!

Ketso: Hi Virgo

Me: I got your message last night

Kets o: Yes

Me: What the hell are you talking about?

Kets o: After we broke up, I found out that I was pregnant

Me: What took you so long to tell me?

Kets o: I was scared.. You know exactly how you are

Me: How do I know that it's mine?

Kets o: I'm 6 months pregnant please count back

Me: We've used protection throughout

Kets o: There was a time when we had drunk sex, we never used protection

Me: Bullshit!! I don't know what you trying to do but it won't work

Kets o: I'm not trying to do anything but make you take responsibility

Me: Why are you telling me now?

Kets o: Because I don't want my Son growing up

without a Father!!

Me: Wait? It's a boy?

Kets o: Yes.. It's a baby boy

Me: It's a baby boy

Kets o: If you ready to talk, you will contact me

She hung up..

AISHA

After our mass age we went to the garden still in our white robes to eat breakfast. I was going to capture this moment and Bomi seemed not to mind me taking pictures.

Me: This is lovely

Bomi: When you have your own, you'll be able to afford this.. See how life is beautiful when you have your own money?

I nodded..

Bomi: Look Aisha I'm not turning you against Virgo but I'll be an untruth parent if I don't show you the way. I could sit here and tell you what you wanna know but I won't, because Virgo is a young man probably no different from the others. I am not going to pressure you into staying with him if you not happy.. When the going gets tough, walk away

I nodded..

Bomi: Walk away and I won't even blame you, I've been your age at one point and trust me I wouldn't be here if I sunk into my mistakes. Worse, I was raised by an old generation. My Mother didn't give me this lecture, it was taboo. They enforced marriage because to them marriage was what determined the worth of the woman. You are the blessed and lucky generation, you don't need a man. Your worth is not determined by marriage. Marriage is not an achievement, it's a blessing

Me: Thank you, I'll always remember that

Bomi: If Virgo doesn't marry you one day, then he would've lost out on a good woman

I blushed..

Bomi: I can talk for the whole of South Africa, let's eat.. You can take as many pictures as you want baby, they'll be your motivation to work hard

You would swear that Bomi is not Virgo's Mom. She is different, her attitude is different from his.. She's rich, she should be full of herself but she's not. She's very humble and respectful..

VIRGO

I called her back..

Ketso: Virgo

Me: Can we meet up?

Kets o: Today?

Me: Yes it's still early

Kets o: Ohw

Me: I'll send you taxi fare cash

Kets o: Okay.. Usual restaurant?

Me: Yes

Kets o: Okay I'll call you when I get there

Me: Okay.. Bye

Kets o: Bye

POZISWA

I was going through the pictures that Aisha was uploading both on her whats app status and Facebook. It seems like she was at a beauty spa..

I don't understand why this girl has managed to get a guy like Virgo, I mean there's nothing special

about her. She only has the brains, but how does that land you a man? I am very serious that there's something she's using. Possibly bathing with, this is not just normal love I swear..

It doesn't make any sense..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:55] : 21

AISHA

We got back at home in the afternoon from a day well spent. I had fun, I enjoyed this day. Though she was very nice and friendly, I still didn't have it in me to talk to her from the top of my head. She has that intimidating aura and a facial expression that sets you back to check yourself if you think of disrespecting her.. She had bought me a few

clothes only because she wanted an outfit for herself for tonight, she said it will seem rude if she only buys for herself. I got 3 jeans, 3 tops, and sneakers with sandals. The whole clothes amounted to R8000, they were beautiful especially the tops...

Me: Thank you for the clothes Ms B

It's somehow calling her "Ma" or "Mom". Virgo and I we not at that level for me to address her in that manner..

Bomi: Let me go rest, I have to leave at 18:00 for a cocktail party

Me: Okay.. Thank you again

Bomi: You welcome sweetie

I walked upstairs to the bedroom, and Virgo wasn't around. I took out my phone and called him, he didn't pick up. I texted him that we home then I went

to fit my clothes..

VIRGO

She made her way in and looked around. She still looked as beautiful as the first time I laid my eyes on her, just seemed more thicker now with the whole pregnancy.. But it was treating her well, she looked beautiful..

She noticed me and made her way to me, Ketso always took good care of herself. Even on a normal day without the makeup and everything, she would still look beautiful.

Ketso: Hi

Me: Hey

She sat down..

Ketso: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Kets o: I'm good

She placed her bag on the table..

Kets o: Thank you for meeting up with me

Me: It's okay

I was pumped when I got here, but seeing her just took me off..

We didn't know what to say to each other, we haven't communicated for 6 months until this predicament... The waitress walked over

Me: I was waiting for you before I could order

Kets o: Ohw.. Okay

Me: Usual?

Kets o: Yes

Me: We'll have prawns

Kets o: And a vanilla milks hake for me

Me: Ice tea for me

Waitress: Coming right up

She walked away..

Kets o: I know this is somehow and I should've told you earlier but I didn't know how

Me: It's been 6 months Kets o

Kets o: I know.. I'm sorry

Me: Why now?

Kets o: J ust decided to tell you so you can make a choice if you wanna be a part of the baby's life or not

Me: How do I even the baby is mine?

Kets o: I am 6 months pregnant, by then when I fell pregnant.. You were the only guy I've been with.. Here

She took out her medical records and showed me,

she showed me everything.. Indeed she was 6 months pregnant, it all validated her statement..

Me: Not now.. Not this now

I rubbed my face with my hand..

Kets o: I don't want you back Virgo, I just want you to take responsibility that's all

Me: This can't be happening now

Kets o: I'm sorry

I put the documents on the table..

Me: I'm in a relationship with someone else

Kets o: I did mention that I don't want you back

Me: I need time to think about this

Kets o: Okay

(Silence)

Kets o: Do you love her?

I looked at her...

Kets o: Do you love her?

Me: Yes I do

She smiled..

Kets o: For how long have you been two dating?

Me: Not for too long

Kets o: What's she like?

Me: She's.. She's very smart, ambitious, different from all the girls I've been with before. She's a go getter, very simple but loveable, humble, always smiling.. Beautiful in her own way, naturally beautiful

Kets o: Wow... She sounds amazing

Me: She is amazing

I said that with a bit of a smile on my face.

Kets o: I never thought that I would witness you being happily in love or that you could truly love

someone.. I know a different you, you were full of anger. Angry at the whole world

Me: I'll think about it

Kets o: Think about what? After everything you've put me through? This will be a better way to make amends by being a present Father. Do you want your Son growing up like you? Wondering what happened to his father? Angry at the world? I don't wanna raise a child like that.. Your father failed you, don't fail your Son

AISHA

My Sister's call came through..

Me: Sis

Sis: You are living thee best life

I laughed..

Me: Stop it

Sis: It's good to see you happy

Me: Thank you

Sis: How is it going at the in laws?

Me: It's going.. Bomi is an amazing woman

Sis: You two are hitting it off well?

Me: Yes

Sis: That's good

Me: I guess it is

Sis: Okay then just making sure that you haven't forgotten about us

Me: Don't be that Person

Sis: What? It's difficult to get a hold of you lately

Me: I'm at school 95% of the time

Sis: I know.. I'm just playing with you Dwaa

Me: Ohw well

Sis: I'm going out, I'll call you later

Me: Okay.. Bye

Sis: Bye

I hung up and called Virgo again, he still didn't pick up..

VIRGO

We were able to catch up on a lot of things, when we were done eating she didn't wanna stay any longer..

She didn't even want me to take her home so I drove her to catch a cab..

Me: You should let me drive you home

Ketso: No it's okay

I looked over at her thick yellow thighs, she was wearing a dress that was above her knees when she was sitting..

Ketso: Right here it's good

Me: Are you sure?

Ketso: Yes.. Thank you again

Me: Text me when you get home so I know you got home safe

Ketso: Is your girlfriend going to be okay with that?

Me: Don't start

Ketso: I'll text you

Me: Cool

Ketso: Bye

Me: Sharp

She got out and walked away fixing her dress

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:55] : 23

AISHA

This incident felt like high school all over again, when I was picked on insulted and bullied as a whole. Virgo spat venom, he was upset and he decided to hurt me in a way that I didn't wanna be hurt anymore..

It's not even a year into our relationship, and I don't understand how the verbal diarrhea came about. Was I wrong to ask? I mean he lied. I had every right to ask him about it, point out the dangers of the situation..

I wouldn't wanna tie myself to a lengthy sickness just because he was cheating, if he is cheating.. Why go to the ends of hurting me by defending this ex? She's an ex she shouldn't matter to him anymore. Why are they still in contact? Isn't an ex an example of a situation that shouldn't happen again?

I tried getting some sleep but I was too hurt, I played his words over and over whilst staring at myself in the mirror. I had taken off my pj top, I wasn't wearing a bra and I was looking at my breasts with tears streaming down. The breasts that are the reason why people found it easy to pick up on me..

If I had money I would have them reduced to a normal size, I'd get rid of them! I'd change how I look in a heartbeat and I wouldn't even think twice...

I wiped my tears and wore my PJ top again, then I went back to the bedroom. He wasn't on the bed, I got in bed and laid my head on the pillow with more tears streaming down.

KEKETS O (KETS O)

My phone woke me up in my sleep, it was Virgo..

Me: Hello

Virgo: Did you get home safe?

Me: Yes

Virgo: You called me?

Me: Yes.. Wanted to tell you that I got home safe

Virgo: That was unnecessary, you could've just texted

Me: I'm sorry for calling

Virgo: What did you say to her?

Me: Who?

Virgo: Aisha

Me: Not much.. I introduced myself

Virgo: Why didn't you hang up when she picked up?

Me: Haibo! Kanti what happened? I didn't even talk to her that much nor said anything that was off, I did introduce myself as your ex

Virgo: Next time text, don't call if I don't call

Me: Virgo I'm pregnant, what if it's an emergency?

Virgo: Just text okay?

Me: Fine then

I hung up..I looked at my phone and smiled

AISHA

I was under the covers and on Facebook.

I couldn't get any sleep. I could sleep in the guest room but Bomi will ask questions, I just wanted to leave already. I wanted it to be tomorrow, so I could go back to res..

I heard the door opening, I locked my phone and pretended to be sleeping..

He switched off the light and got in bed.

I kept still and I was emotional all over again

I cried in silence, I don't want any altercations anymore. I was not up for any, both emotionally and psychologically..

I don't know at what time I slept, but when I woke up it was already in the morning. The sun was shining, I checked the time and it was 09:00am. Virgo wasn't next to me, I woke up went to bath.. My eyes were puffy showed that I had been crying, cried myself to sleep..

I walked downstairs and they were already sitting at the table, eating breakfast..

Me: Good morning

Bomi: Morning.. Thought you were never going to wake up

I faked a smile..

Me: I slept late

Bomi: I don't want details

Me: Ohh no I was going through my notes almost all night, tests are close

Bomi: Ready?

Me: I just left with a few chapters then I'll be ready

Bomi: Virgo are you ready?

Virgo: Yeah.. Whatever!

I tried to not stare at her in the eye so she doesn't notice that I had puffy eyes..

Bomi: I just don't let him slack behind on his school work

I nodded.. Bomi's phone vibrated..

Bomi: Excuse me guys

She got up took her phone and walked away..

Virgo: We leaving at 11am

Me: Okay

So we won't talk about what happened last night?
Everything that he said? Him slapping me??

I poured myself juice and I ate a muffin, didn't have
an appetite..

KOKETSO (KETSO)

My Mom went to church this morning, I didn't feel
like going. All those eyes on me, people from
church judging me. It's too much I won't handle
that..

I texted Virgo on whatsapp:

Me: Going to the clinic tomorrow morning

I thought he would take time to reply, but he didn't..

Virgo: Isn't the Dr more good?

Me: I don't have money for the Dr

Virgo: I'll send you some money

Me: You don't have too, I've been attending the clinic and it's really helping

Virgo: I'll send you money to go to the Dr, send me your account details

Me: Okay.. Thank you

Virgo: Cool

AISHA

After eating, I helped cleared the table..

Bomi: Trouble in paradise?

I looked at her..

Bomi: I'm no fool.. I could see the tension between you two

Me: It's nothing just a stupid argument

Bomi: Something that can be fixed?

I kept quiet..

Bomi: A stupid argument in the morning things are already talked over.. What did he do?

Me: It's nothing serious

Bomi: I know my Son

Me: He was just in a mood that's all

She nodded..

Bomi: Remember what we discussed yesterday

Me: I remember

Bomi: Good.. I hope you guys will drive back safely then

Me: Me too

VIRGO

I was outside smoking, this whole situation with Ketso fucked me up. Since she told me that she's pregnant, my head has been all over the place and I took it all out on Aisha. When I informed her that we'll be leaving at 11am, she responded. That's good, means it'll be easy to talk myself out of this situation.

Aisha is not going anywhere and I'll make sure of it, the training of her taking all my shit has started. The love will hurt just as much as it'll make her happy and I need someone who is emotionally strong to handle this shit, handle my unstable moods. My outbursts, my losing it.. I mean she has a low self esteem and if I could play her on that, I'll definitely make her stay. Brainwash her into thinking that I'm the only guy for her, I'm the deal for her and that no guy will ever love her as much as I do.. The problem about these pretty perfect girls, they walk out as soon as someone else shows interest. They know they can still get another guy. Whilst girls like Aisha, it's not easy... After smoking, I walked back into the

house. She was at the kitchen, I made my way to her...

Me: Aisha

She looked at me..

Me: Look.. About last night

I put my hands in my pockets..

Me: Relationships have their ups and downs, relationships are not easy. You can make them work if both Parties are willing to put on the work. What you did was wrong, invading my privacy like that? I don't check your phone.. I don't touch your phone and I expect that same respect from you.. I am sorry about what happened, but it's all your fault, had you not invaded my privacy then what happened last night wouldn't have happened.. I believe most girls share the same dream of getting married, and yes you have your education but it won't fulfil that part of your life. You'll witness your peers getting married and you'll be miserable for the rest of your life.. I am willing to take it that step one

day, and I need to know that you will stay. Out of all the girls in campus I chose you, I'm with you. Do you know how many girls are jealous of you right now? Do you know how much they would want to be in your position? I'm just saying that what happened yesterday was stupid, and I hope we can put it behind us. It'll be a shame if we break up because I love you very much, just stay in your lane and we won't have anymore problems yeah?

She nodded..

Me: I'm glad we understand each other

I walked away..

Me: Ohw by the way, I would like you to spend some time with me at the flat I mean we are in a relationship and you supposed to visit more than you actually do, we'll get to Res you'll take a few things maybe spend a week at my place right?

Aisha: Right

Me: I'm glad we understand each other and do remember, I don't get dumped.. Keep that in mind

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 21:55] : 24

VIRGO

We stopped by for treats, at some ice cream and waffle joint. Aisha has been in a mood ever since we left home, she was not her usual self. Didn't say much, only gave one word answers...

Ice cream is a good treat when one is feeling blue, hoping a bit of sugar will make her ease up..

Me: I'm going to the Men's room, I'll be back

She nodded. I got up and made my way to the waitress that was serving us..

Me: Hi

Her: Hey

Me: Can you do me a favour

Her: Uhm.. Okay

Me: See my table

Her: Yes

Me: I need you to go to my girlfriend and tell her that she's lucky to have me as her boyfriend

She looked puzzled..

Me: We had an argument and I'm scared she might leave, just need you to convince her that she's lucky to have me. I don't know how you going to do it but you know how you women work

Her: I don't know

Me: I was going to tip you R100, if you do this for me.. I'll tip you R300

Her: That's all I have to do?

Me: Yes

Her: I can do that

Me: Thank you

I walked to the bathroom..

AISHA

I was sitting there very much keeping myself busy with social media and eating my waffle when our waitress walked up to me..

Her: Hey (Smiling)

Me: Hi

Her: Are you still okay?

Me: Yes.. Thank you

Her: Okay

I went back to my phone..

Her: I'm sorry I don't mean to be forward but..

Me: Yes?

Her: The guy you sitting with, is it a friend or something?

Me: Why?

Her: I.. He's very hot, me and the other waitresses we were checking him out.. He's a snack.. Was actually about to ask for his number or something

Me: Ohw

Her: I'm sorry.. I know how awkward this might be I faked a smile..

Me: It is awkward

Virgo walked back..

Virgo: Is everything okay?

Waitress: Yes.. Uhm you handsome

Virgo: Thank you

Waitress: Was even tempted to ask for your number

Virgo looked at me..

Virgo: I don't think my girlfriend will be okay with that

Waitress: I'm so sorry.. I didn't, I thought it was just a friend or something

Virgo: Why would you think that?

Waitress: I mean..

Virgo: That's very rude and I don't think I'm comfortable with you saying such in front of my girlfriend..

Waitress: I didn't mean to come across as rude

Virgo: We here to get some treats and you here harassing my girlfriend, asking her Personal things.. It's wrong

Waitress: I'll just leave you guys, I'm sorry again

She walked away...

Virgo: I think that was rude and very unprofessional, I should report her to her manager

Me: That's unnecessary I'm sure she meant no

harm

Virgo: It was very rude

He sat down again, I looked at him.. Did he just defend me? Defend our relationship?

I looked at him as he continued eating his ice cream..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My Mom was screaming on top of her voice.

She just came back from church and was on my case..

Ma: You help me with nothing around here! I went to church, thought I would come back and you would've cooked but you haven't! I have to start afresh and cook.. You didn't go to church what did you do this whole time?

I kept quiet..

Ma: J ust because you are pregnant it doesn't mean you are a cripple! I do everything for you and you can't help me with something so simple? I have to come back and cook for your phat ass? You are useless Ketso! All you are good for is opening your legs and making babies!

I didn't say anything..

She got emotional..

Ma: What did I do to deserve you as a child? Out of all my children you are the only one who has disappointed me thus far, I had high hopes for you! Your peers are at school realizing their future and you thought the best way to go about in life is to create a baby? Whilst you don't even have a job? What were you thinking embarrassing me like that? You can't put a pot on the stove but you know how to open your legs? You have embarrassed me! You have embarrassed me and I'm even ashamed of

you right now!

I couldn't listen to more of this, I walked away and went to my room...

AISHA

After our ice cream break Virgo went to pay, I saw him talking to the waitress one last time. She looked at me and then looked away, from his facial expression and hand gesture. I could tell that he was still upset.

He walked back to me, then we made our way to the car...

Virgo: I'm going to report this joint, put them on social media

Me: I liked their ice cream though and hoping to

come back again

He looked at me..

Me: It's okay, I don't think you should do that. I'm sure she learnt her lesson

Virgo: Good for her because you are a sweet Person, you just saved her job

I smiled..

Virgo: You are a sweet girl, see why I need you in my life? You are the voice of reason

Me: It's okay

He leaned over and kissed me..

Virgo: I love you

Me: I love you too

Virgo: Let's go home

Me: Okay

KOKETS O (KETS O)

All the time since I fell pregnant my Mother has been swearing at me, verbally abusing me and even threw me around a few times.

I had enough of this! She's going to send me into early labour..

I know where Virgo's house is, Bomi knows me. We've ran to each other a few times before when I was doing sleep overs. Right now her home, is the only home that I could think of. I can't go to relatives, she will get me there and start all over again. Virgo's house is the only house now that I can run too..

I packed my things with tears streaming down. She was still at it, still swearing at me and all that.. I will walk out of here and go straight to Virgo's house...

AISHA

We drove back and went straight to the Res so I could pack a few clothes since I'll be staying over at his flat for a week..

What happened the other night, I'm praying that it was a once off thing. Yes it hurt, it still hurts. Those words hurt but I can see that he's sorry and regretting, I hope he won't do this again. I love Virgo, I'm falling deeply in love with him.. I checked my phone as I was packing and he had changed his whatsapp profile picture, and put my picture. I was flattered, he was showing me off...

Virgo was showing me off, how many guys can do that? This was just breath taking..

KEKETSU (KETSU)

I walked to the kitchen and she was peeling the

carrots, more like butchering them..

She looked at me...

Me: I am leaving

Ma: Leaving?

Me: I think it's for the best

Ma: Where are you going?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Ma: If you leave, don't ever come back

Me: It's fine

I walked to the door..

Ma: Don't even think about going to any relatives

Me: I'm not going there

Ma: Good akere you are a grown woman woman now, you can get your own so please don't come

back!! Wherever you going if it gets tough, don't come back

I nodded..

Me: I won't, I'd rather die

She walked up to me..

Ma: You are a disrespectful and evil child!! I wish you nothing but pain and tears

Me: I don't care!!

She grabbed my wig and it fell off, she came for me and I pushed her back. She fell..

She laid there and looked at me, I opened the door and walked out.. Banging the door behind me....

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:56] : 25

KOKETSO (KETSO)

I went to town, then at town requested an Uber that left me straight at the gate..

I rang the monitor and their Helper questioned me, then she opened the gate for me and I walked in...

Their house is exactly how I know it, still the same..

Helper: Would you like something to drink?

Me: Uhm.. No thank you

Helper: Bomi went out but she'll be back, it's been long since she went out

Me: Okay thank you

Helper: Ketso.. What's happening?

She remembers me.. She saw me a few times when I used to come here..

Me: I.. I'm pregnant

Helper: I can see that... Virgo?

I nodded...

Helper: How far along?

Me: 6 months

Helper: It's been long, Does Virgo know?

Me: Yes

Helper: He never said anything to us

Me: He only found out now

Helper: Why you never told us? Earlier than now

Me: We had broken up, I didn't know how to communicate it

Helper: I see... Bomi will be here soon

Me: Okay

AISHA

Today I was cooking. I forced Virgo that we should

get oxtail liver and he did..

It's easy to cook and it doesn't require much.

Pap and oxtail liver, I hope he eats Pap...

He was playing playing a game as I continued cooking...

My phone rang, it was my Mother..

Me: Ma

Ma: Hello Baby

Me: How are you?

Ma: I'm well and how are you?

Me: I'm well too

Ma: I'm from church

I looked at the time, church comes out late in the

afternoon. Our church comes out late..

Me: How was church?

Ma: Church was good as always

Me: I'm glad to hear that

Ma: Your Sister tells me you have a boyfriend

I looked at Virgo..

Me: Thobeka has a big mouth

Ma: So you don't have one?

Me: I. I do

Ma: You met him there?

Me: Yes.. He's in my class

Ma: What's his name?

Me: Virgo

Ma: What kind of a name is that?

I laughed..

Me: He's home name is Ludwe.. Ludwe Virgo
Swartbooi

Ma: He's Xhosa?

Me: Yes

Ma: Hai.. I'm not going to say much, you haven't been there for a long time but please take care of yourself. Remember your education comes first not a baby, you have been afforded a good opportunity don't play with it

Me: So you not angry?

Ma: Why should I? You are old enough, should I come with a belt?

We laughed..

Ma: J ust be careful

Me: I will be

Ma: I love you so much

Me: I love you too

KOKETSO (KETSO)

Bomi walked in, I stood up all nervous.

She looked at me..

Bomi: Ketso right?

I nodded..

Bomi: Ketso how do I help you?

Me: I.. I am pregnant, that's quite obvious. Found out 6 months ago, when Virgo and I broke up. 2 weeks after the breakup

Bomi: Wait.. What?

Me: My Mother put me out, she's been abusing me ever since I found out that I'm pregnant

Bomi: Shuuuuuu... Khosi!! Kho..

Khosi ran in..

Khosi: Madam

Bomi: Get me a glass of wine.. No get me vodka, half a glass don't dash it

Khosi: Yes Mam

She walked off..

Bomi: Please sit

I sat down..

Bomi: I don't understand.. Why you did you come here? And why now?

Me: I had nowhere else to go, my Mother has turned everyone against me

Bomi: Does.. Does Virgo know?

Me: Yes

Bomi: He didn't tell me anything

Me: Ms B please... I have nowhere else to go for now, I'm just asking to stay here for a couple of days or so until I figure out where to go next

Bomi: I don't know, I can't just let you stay here.. Virgo has to talk to me first. I have to have a word with him

Me: Please I have nowhere to go

Bomi: You can stay today because it's already late but I'll have to talk to Virgo.. I'll call him and talk to him

Me: Okay

Bomi: Khosi will prepare the guest room for you in the meantime

Me: Okay thank you so much

She nodded..

VIRGO

I was disturbed in the middle of the game by my Mother's call coming through.. I paused, I was playing Fifa..

Me: Hello

Bomi: Ketso is here!

Me: What?

Bomi: She's pregnant and she's saying it's your child, what's going on Virgo?

Me: What do you mean she's there?

Bomi: She came with the a bag saying she got kicked out of home

I sighed...

Bomi: Is the baby yours?

Me: She did show me the medical evidence and she's indeed 6 months pregnant, we were still together then

Bomi: Ludwe!!

Me: I didn't mean for this to happen

Bomi: Ludwe she can't stay here

Me: Where is she gonna go if she doesn't have anywhere to go? Bomi she might be..

I looked at Aisha in the kitchen..

Me: Pregnant with my baby

Bomi: What about Aisha? Have you told her?

Me: Not yet

Bomi: I don't know about this

Me: I grew up without a Father and it's something

that messed me up for years, I'm not going to let my child go through that too. Have him grow up without a Father like I did

(Silence)

Bomi: Okay fine she can stay for now but we have to talk about this

Me: We will and thank you

Bomi: I'll call you again, bye

Me: Bye

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:56] : 26

AISHA

A FEW DAYS LATER

School was getting more tougher, the workload was

getting more and more straining and stressful..

It was in the afternoon and we were just from writing an OSCE test, it will be contributing to our clinical part of the work. It's very important, they put pictures on the screen and let you identify the conditions..

I had prepared well for it, and I'm sure I'll pass..

Ase: I'm sure that I'll get 50%

Me: I'm sure too

Po: I'm not sure

Me: You didn't study?

Po: I didn't know what an OSCE is hence I would never prepared for it

Me: But they did tell us what it's going to be about

Po: Either way

We looked at the notice board..

Me: At least we got 70% for our presentation

Ase: Good news at least

We saw Virgo and his new friends coming through. He has made friends from the BDS class, because there's modules we attend together now.. It was two guys, a white guy and a black guy..

Virgo: Ladies

We greeted back..

Virgo: These are my classmates.. Aisha, Po, and Ase.. Ladies these are my friends

I didn't expect that kind of introduction for my part. They nodded and then proceeded with their walk..

Ase: A group of handsome friends

Po: Tell me about it

We walked out of the building..

Po: I expected a more detailed introduction from your side Aisha

I looked at her..

Po: He didn't introduce you as his girlfriend

Ase: Maybe he did before he introduced us all together

Po: Yeah probably

We walked to the cafeteria..

VIRGO

For the first time I found myself friends that I belong too.. Jonathan and Morgan..

They both from well financial stable backgrounds, live in wonderpark flats..

The white guy Jonathan drives a white Hyundai i10. Not the best car but white people don't like to flash a lot, on the other side Morgan drives Mercedes c220, it's one of his Parents car that was given to him to make traveling convenient for him...

I couldn't introduce Aisha as my girlfriend as yet, I don't want them having different assumptions on why I would be with a basic girl. The degree I'm studying towards is basic enough for them since they doing BDS..

Mo: Guys Rugby game is on this Saturday

Jo: We can watch it at my flat, I'll invite more friends

Me: Yeah I like the idea

Mo: Don't forget Virgo, I still have Fifa to beat you in
I chuckled..

Me: In your dreams

J o: You gotta switch qualifications Man, come to BDS next year

Mo: BDT is..

J o: What career are you going to make out of being a Dental Therapist?

Mo: How much do they even earn?

J o: 16k-18k?

Mo: I ain't come to varsity for no 16k

We all laughed..

Me: Don't worry next year I'm coming

Mo: We gotta go Man.. We have our last class to attend

Me: Ayt cats, I'll see you tomorrow

Mo: See if you were on our side, we would be attending together

Me: Don't sweat it

J o: We'll see you tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow it is

AISHA

We were at the cafeteria, Po and Ase were getting something to eat for later on at Res.

I decided to get myself a plate too..

Virgo texted me that he's waiting..

Me: Guys I have to go

Po: When are you coming back to Res?

Me: I'm not sure

Ase: We'll see you tomorrow

Me: Bye girls

I made my way to his car...

I got inside and closed the door..

Me: Hey

Virgo: Hey

He started the car and drove off...

Me: It's good to see that you making friends

Virgo: Is this about how I introduced you?

Yes it was, I just didn't wanna come out right and say it, because his moods are unstable..

Virgo: I only introduced you as a classmate because I don't want them in my business, I am only starting to get to know them. I don't want them in my business as yet, wanna see if I can trust them first

Me: I understand don't worry

(Silence)

Virgo: What is that?

Me: Food from the cafeteria

Virgo: Are you insane?

Me: What?

Virgo: That place is dirty.. The food is filthy and a health hazard! How are you to keep healthy and have an attractive body if you eat disgusting unhealthy food like that! The meat is very oily the whole thing is disgusting!

I didn't say anything..

KOKETSO (KETSO)

Bomi was starting to warm up to me a little.

When I got here she was a bit cold, couldn't even look me in the eye but when we went for my

checkup and she heard the heartbeat on the monitor when they doing the scan. I saw her face lit up a little, since from then she's been trying to be nice to me..

Me: I like this one

Bomi: Ncooo it's cute

Me: Thank you Bomi for this, I appreciate it

Bomi: It's my Grandchild, I'll do anything for him

Me: The clothes are quite expensive though, Earth child

Bomi: They didn't hurt my bank balance don't worry

Me: I am grateful that I have a place that I can call home, a place that is less stressful

Bomi: Yaa home must've been really bad

Me: You don't wanna

Bomi: J ust give your Mother time, she will come around

Me: I hope so

AISHA

We got to the flat and already there was tension, I glanced down at my food and lost my appetite immediately from all those things that he said to me in the car...

Virgo: I'm going to take a shower then I'll order Pizza

Me: Okay

Virgo: Do me a favor

Me: Yes?

Virgo: Throw that food away

Me: Okay

I took the plate and walked outside to throw it away...

KOKETSU (KETSU)

I took pictures of the clothes and sent them to Virgo, he called right away..

Virgo: Dove

Me: Dove

Virgo: You went shopping today?

Me: Yes.. Aren't the clothes cute?

Virgo: They very cute

Me: I'm telling you

Surprisingly enough Virgo was warming up to me too..

Virgo: I can't wait for him to be born

Me: Me too

Virgo: I have to go, just got back from school wanna shower and sleep a little

Me: Okay Dove talk later

Virgo: Take care

Me: You too

.

To be continued

Apologies for the delay was busy with my hair,
bonus coming later

[03/14, 21:56] : 27

AISHA

I'm not going to lie, my relationship with Virgo was starting to take it's toll on me. Lately he has been a very difficult person to deal with, his moods are highly unstable. One moment he's nice, the next he's a total ass..

I love Virgo, I think I love him more than I should now. I have faith that there's a part of him that loves me dearly, I just don't know why he's so Angry and difficult. It's like I'm suffering for sins that I didn't even commit.

I am slowly but surely starting to get scared of him, when he gets mad. He gets mad..

The next morning we woke up and prepared for school...I looked at him packing his things up and putting them in his backpack.

Me: Virgo

He looked at me..

Me: Can I go back to Res today?

Virgo: Why?

Me: I just think we need some space, like how it used to be

Virgo: What's at Res?

Me: Sorry?

Virgo: What's at Res that you can't wait to get back too?

Me: There's nothing, I just miss my friends and space

Virgo: I suffocate you?

Me: No.. That's not what I meant

Virgo: Is there someone else at Res?

Me: No

Virgo: Then you don't have something important to go back too

Me: I just wanna go back to Res that's all

Virgo: And you not going

Me: You can't stop me

Virgo: Wanna bet?

Me: I'm leaving

Virgo: Come here

Me: What?

Virgo: Come here

I walked up to him.. He grabbed my arm really tight and marched me to the bathroom.

Me: What are you doing?

Virgo: Giving you time to think about your decision

He threw me in, then took the key..

Me: No!!!

He closed the door and locked me, I didn't have my phone with me..

Me: Virgo you can't do this!!

Virgo: You just need a day to yourself to think about your decision

I banged at the door..

Me: Open the door!!

Virgo: I'll see you when I get back

Me: Virgo please!! Don't do this!!.. Virgo!!

ASENATHI

We got to school that morning, everyone settled in for our first class.. Aisha is always early, if she's not she always comes in with Virgo. Virgo walked in alone this morning.

I looked at the door thinking that she will come in but she didn't..

The lecturer walked in, Aisha is not the one to miss a class..

Me: Where is Aisha?

Po: You asking the wrong Person

Me: It's unlike her to miss a class

Po: Maybe she got too much action last night, she's

probably tired

Me: Yeah.. Maybe

We sat through the first class, then the second, and the 3rd. There was still no sign of Aisha.. After our 3rd class, I decided to go to Virgo..

Me: Hi

Virgo: Hi

Me: Uhm.. Is Aisha okay?

Virgo: She's not

Me: What happened?

Virgo: When we got to the flat after she ate food from the cafeteria, she started to have a serious stomach bug

Me: That's terrible

Virgo: Ya.. I couldn't let her come in the state that she's in, she is very weak

Me: I tried calling her and texting her but she's not responding

Virgo: She's probably sleeping, she didn't sleep at all.. I'm glad she's not on her phone, she deserves some bed rest

Me: You right.. Thank you for informing me

Virgo: You welcome

AISHA

I've been sitting on the bathroom floor leaning against the door with my back for hours now. I cried until I got a headache.

This is the lowest he's ever gone, why is he doing this? Why is he acting this way?..

I was getting paranoid and an anxiety attack just sitting here and listening to myself crying.. This was

upsetting...

VIRGO

There's no way that I'm letting Aisha go, or letting her leave me. I need her to understand who is in charge, I need her to understand that she can't just make such decisions...

Even this thing of her wanting to study BDS next year, I'm not feeling it. The next thing she's in a different class getting used to different people.. I know she can find someone else, but she doesn't know that so long she keeps on believing that she's not good enough for anyone else then she's not going anywhere..

If I lose her, if she realizes her worth it's over for me and I can't have that..

I received a call from my Mother..

Me: Bomi

Bomi: Hi sweetie

Me: Is everything okay?

Bomi: Everything is fine

Me: You calling me during school hours

Bomi: Ohw yes I wanted to talk to you about Kets o

Me: Is everything okay with her?

Bomi: Everything is fine, she's a lovely girl. I just wanna go to her house find out what really happened. She can't just alienate her family it's not right.. Now that I'm fully responsible for her, her family needs to know that she's here

Me: I thought she did mention that things at home were not good

Bomi: I know but Virgo I can't just let her stay here without knowing where she's from. Without her family knowing. It doesn't matter if they swear at

me but they need to know that she's here

Me: I'll talk to her

Bomi: Thank you Baby.. How is Aisha?

Me: She's fine

Bomi: Did you talk to her?

Me: Not yet

Bomi: When are you going to do it?

Me: I'll do it

Bomi: Okay baby enjoy the rest of your day

Me: Okay bye

Bomi: Bye

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I was laying on the couch watching TV when the helper Khosi walked in..

Khosi: Singakhuluma? (can we talk)

I looked at her..

Khosi: I have a problem with how you carry yourself

Me: Sorry?

Khosi: You don't clean your room, now that I understand but not washing your underwears leaving used pantyliners to pile up in the bathroom bin? Can't you take the dirty liners to the garbage bin outside? Can't you wash your own underwear? There's always empty packages of snacks, chocolates, juice bottles lying around in your room. Dirty dishes and cups

Me: If I wasn't pregnant I would clean after myself

Khosi: Pregnant women are flexible, very flexible

Me: So do you expect me to clean? Bend over and clean? Carry heavy duties? I have a back problem!

Khosi: Those are minor tasks to carry out

Me: You are the maid! It's your job

Khosi: I'm not your maid!

Me: Fine.. I'll just tell Virgo that you expect me to carry out house duties and let's see how he's going to feel about this

Khosi: Yazi ukhohlakele! (You are cruel)

Me: Just do your job okay?

She shook her head..

Khosi: Yazi I heard Aisha was here sometime, I came monday morning. Kitchen was clean, pots clean, Virgos room clean.. Everything was clean just as how I left it. I heard she even cooked

Me: So where is she?

Khosi: Virgo has made a lot of mistakes in his life, but this.. This is insane, I wonder where he got you

Me: You can leave if you done

She clicked her tongue and walked out..

Khosi: Sies!

VIRGO

During lunch break I went to my crew...

We drove out to eat in town, we were using Morgan's car..

We were talking about random things, until the conversation went to dating..

Mo: Seeing anyone Virgo?

Me: Uhm yeah

Mo: Who?

I thought about Aisha..

Me: Her name is Koketso but I we call her Ketso.
She's back at home.. Me here

I went and got Kets o's picture before she was pregnant..

J o: She's beautiful

Mo: Leme see

He took a glance since he was driving..

Mo: She's a beaut!!

Me: That she is, she's very beautiful

Mo: What does she do?

Me: She's studying.. She's also in tertiary

J o: Beautiful.. Beauty and brains

Mo: Hardly find that combination

Me. I know

I moved to Aisha's picture and looked at it.

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:56] : 28

AISHA

Virgo only let me out when he came back..

I went for hours without food, with how paranoid I was I didn't even pay much attention to my hunger..

Virgo: I brought us something to eat

I looked at him..

Virgo: Did you get time to think about your decision?

I slowly nodded..

He walked up to me, I took a few steps back..

Virgo: We will be fine, so long you do as I say

Me: I understand

Virgo: Don't make things difficult, just be a good girlfriend and we will have peace

Me: Okay

Virgo: You can freshen up so long I warm up the food

I looked at the bathroom..

Virgo: I'll leave the bathroom door open

I didn't say anything, I walked to the bathroom..

Virgo: Aisha

I turned and looked at him..

Virgo: I'm not a monster

Me: I know

What am I going to do? How will I get out of this one?
What did I get myself into??

KOKETSO (KETSO)

Me: You should come and visit me

Lera: I don't know, do you think that's appropriate?

Lera is my best friend..

Me: Bomi won't say anything, she knows she will come head on with her Son

Lera: He's still at it?

Me: He'll never stop

Lera: Why does he do that? Why does she allow him to do that?

Me: She doesn't know who Virgo's Father is, so she's trying to make it up to him

Lera: He's an ungrateful brat!

Me: One lucky brat.. My Mother overreacts just be me saying something small, something not offensive

Lera: You hit the lottery

Me: Girl!

Lera: So what's going to happen when the baby gets born? Babies tend to embarrass you and look exactly like their Fathers

Me: I have 4 months to go, by then I would've collected enough money from then to start on my own. That's if they suspect the baby is not theirs.. I'm praying it's his

Lera: Virgo is crazy, be careful

Me: I'm always careful, I mean if you were me what would you do?

Lera: I wouldn't have gotten pregnant in the first place

We laughed..

Me: Now I just have to get the maid fired, she's irritating

Lera: Just play your cards right

Me: I will

AISHA

We went through our food in silence..

I couldn't down the food, I was just forcing it down..

Me: H.. How was school?

Virgo: School was boring as always, you didn't miss much

I nodded..

Virgo: So look let's talk about something

I looked at him all nervous..

Virgo: Still going to apply for BDS next year?

Me: Yes

Virgo: Me too

Me: That's nice

Virgo: And I need you to help me out

Me: How?

Virgo: Tests and everything I need a good year mark

Me: How do I help? It sounds almost impossible

Virgo: We going to construct a copying mechanism that will work for both of us

Me: I don't wanna be excluded

Virgo: You won't

This didn't sound well... I don't like it..

Me: Okay

Tomorrow morning I need to find a way to get everything in my bag and leave with it, I will leave school early and go back to Res..

I don't know much about love, what I know is that this guy I'm dating is dangerous. He is not all together upstairs and I don't wanna be with someone that I'm scared of..

Virgo: You know that I love you right?

Me: I know

I faked a smile..

Me: About today, I'm sorry.. I overreacted

Virgo: I'm glad you realize your mistake

Me: It won't happen again

Virgo: Of course it's not going to happen again, because I won't let it happen again!

I was even scared to be on my phone..

I didn't finish all my food, I ate half and then refrigerated the rest..

Virgo: I'm going to shower, can I trust you?

Me: Yes

Virgo: Okay

Me: Can you please put on a game for me, I saw you playing grand theft auto it seems interesting

Virgo: And difficult

Me: I'll teach myself

He connected and put on the game for me, then we went to shower..

I decided to put a few things in my bag, the bag I use for school.. I didn't take all my clothes because I didn't wanna make him alert, have him asking questions..

I hope I manage to escape tomorrow morning..

KOKETSU (KETSU)

Bomi and I were having dinner quietly..

Bomi: How was your day?

Me: It was good.. Yours?

Bomi: It was okay.. Don't you ever get bored of being stuck in the house?

Me: Not at all... Mam'Khosi becomes good company I help her out here and there just to keep busy and flexible

Bomi: That's nice

Me: It's the only exercise I can do

Bomi: So what are your plans after giving birth?

Me: Uhm.. I haven't thought that far

Bomi: A baby is not a life sentence and I don't mind helping out but you can't be entirely dependent on me.. This is life, something can happen.. When I had Virgo, I didn't sit by and let life pass me by. I still went for what I wanted that's why I am able to provide for myself and my child without the help of a man

Me: I just want my Son to grow up with both Parents, something that Virgo and I couldn't fully have

Bomi: A child can grow up with only a single parent,

it's not a shame nor a sin

Me: I know it's just that.. I really want what's best for my child

Bomi: Your plans can't be only on that, you have to think further

Me: I get the feeling that you don't like me being around here

Bomi: I never said that

Me: I know I'm a burden, I'm so sorry.. I'll leave
I got up..

Bomi: I never said that!

VIRGO

I walked out from the bathroom to Aisha trying to get through with the game..

My phone rang, it was Ketso..

I took it and went to the bathroom to answer it..

Me: Dove

I heard her sniffing..

Me: Are you okay?

Kets o: Your Mother indirectly asked me to leave

Me: What?

Kets o: She called me useless indirectly just because I said I want my child to grow up with both Parents.. She undermined me, made me feel a failure for falling pregnant without getting my degree first

Me: I don't think she meant any harm, she likes preaching.. I'm sure it was coming from a good place

Kets o: You don't know what she said to me

Me: I'll talk to her

Kets o: Please don't.. I don't wanna start any trouble between you two.. I'll leave

Me: And go where?

Kets o: I don't know

Me: Let me just talk to her

Kets o: How about I come live with you?

Me: Huh?

Kets o: You renting a flat right? So you can live with anyone

Me: Yeah I don't think so

Kets o: I am the mother of your child! You going to leave me stranded? Your Mother doesn't like me, she hates me!

Me: I'll talk to her

Kets o: Make me a bad Person

Me: J ust calm down okay?

Kets o: Okay

I hung up...

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:56] : 29

AISHA

I prayed throughout the night for my plan to succeed, I needed to get away. I only came here to further my studies, not go through what I'm going through with Virgo. What he did today, was a perfect example of him getting in between something that I've worked so hard for. I won't let him take that away from me...

This morning he seemed to be very distracted, his mind was somewhere far away. Somewhere off.. I was even able to sneak in my toilet bag inside my school bag.

We drove to school in silence, when we arrived. I

got out and went to class, he remained in the car lost in his thoughts..

VIRGO

When Aisha left, I called my Mother and talked to her about the issue with Kets o..

Ma: Those are lies, this girl is lying I've never said anything of that nature

Me: I'm so hurt right now, that my own Mother would mistreat my baby Mama like that

Ma: Ludwe I've never mistreated this girl, I have been nothing but nice to her

Me: Why would she lie on you?

Ma: Why would you believe her over your own Mother?

Me: Because my own Mother wanted to abort me!
Because my own Mother is not all sincere

Ma: Ludwe!!

Me: I don't even know what to say to you, I'm disappointed

Ma: Virgo

I hung up...

AISHA

I got in class and sat next to Ase..

Ase: Hey.. How are you?

Me: I'm good

Ase: Heard you were sick yesterday, stomach bug of some sort?

Me: Yes

Ase: How are you today?

Me: I'm feeling better

I couldn't hold myself, I broke down..

Ase: What's wrong?

I shook my head..

Me: What did I get myself into?

Ase: What do you mean?

Me: All I wanted was nothing but love, all I wanted was.. Why do such things always happen to me?

Ase: Maybe we should go out to the cafeteria and talk

Me: No.. I.. We can't leave class

Ase: What good are you in this condition? You will be crying throughout and inviting attention to yourself

I nodded..

Ase: Let's go.. We will be back

I nodded..

We got up, she took my bag and hers then we walked out of class and went to the cafeteria....

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I heard a knock at the door..

It's probably Khosi, that woman is annoying.

Me: Come in

The door opened and Bomi walked in..

Me: Bomi

She closed the door and leaned against it looking at me, she had that bitch resting face

Bomi: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Bomi: I'm good too

I nodded..

Bomi: Can you do me a favour?

Me: Okay?

Bomi: Please bath we going somewhere

Me: Where?

Bomi: To your Mother's house

Me: My Mother's house?

Bomi: Yes.. I need to talk to her, tell her that you staying here

Me: I did tell you what happened there

Bomi: Yes you did

Me: I can't go there

Bomi: It doesn't matter if she swears at us but she must know where you staying

I nodded..

Me: She's at work now

Bomi: When she knocks off?

Me: Okay

Bomi: I'm sorry about last night, I didn't mean to make you feel somehow

Me: It's okay

Bomi: We'll go later then

Me: Okay

She smiled and walked out..

AISHA

Po had followed us to the cafeteria when she saw us walking out, when we got there. I told them everything...

Ase: What?

Po: Virgo? Thee Virgo?

Me: Yes

Ase: This is sickening! He is abusing you Aisha!

Me: I'm starting to get scared of him, he's always mad.. I don't know why

Ase: He has his demons that he needs to deal with, you have nothing to do with that

Po: Like Virgo? Virgo? Virgo? Yes he's arrogant but this?

Ase: Abusers don't come written on their foreheads that they abusers, Abusers are not always ugly guys. Any guy can abuse

Po: I didn't mean it like that

Ase: Look Po this is the current situation, Virgo is abusing Aisha.. That's all that matters right now

Po: Right!

Ase: Look.. Go to Res, obviously you are not okay

Po: I agree

Me: I don't wanna miss classes

Ase: It's just for today, go cry it all out come back tomorrow better

Po: True.. I support that

Ase: I'm so sorry Aisha, you are beautiful and you shouldn't let a man treat you like this

Po: He's treating you like this because of his own insecurities

Ase: That's true, he's trying to convince you that no other Man can love you. He's trying to break you

down

Po: Dumb him! You don't have to do it alone, we can be with you if you scared

I nodded..

Me: Thank you guys

Ase: It's 08:00am now, first bus to res is at 09:00am.. We will sit here with you until the bus comes so we know you safe

Po: At least he won't gate crash the Res, he can't just show up there and force his way in

Me: That's better

Po: Come here you..

Po got up and hugged me..

Po: It's going to be okay

VIRGO

I walked in class, I didn't see Aisha and her friends.

The class had already started..

I took out my phone and texted her:

"Where are you?"

It went through..

I put my phone away and then it vibrated, I thought it was her but it was Ketso..

"Your Mother is taking me home later on to talk to my Mother, I'll tell you how it goes"

I sighed..

This situation with Ketso was tiring..

AISHA

Me: He just texted me

Ase: Saying what?

Me: Asking where I am

Ase: Tell him cafeteria, I'm here to get breakfast

Me: What if he comes?

Ase: I'm here, Po is here, it's 3 of us and 1 of him.

It'll be big of him to start any altercation here

I texted him back with my hands trembling:

"I'm at the cafeteria with Po and Ase, we having breakfast"

He texted back:

"Okay"

I closed my eyes and sighed..

Me: He bought it

Ase: It's going to be okay, you'll be okay

POZIS WA

I had excused myself and told them that I had to call my "Boyfriend", but I was calling my friend "Alf"..

Me: Ase said I'm evil when I told her that a guy like Virgo what would he be doing with a girl like Aisha?

Alf: So he really did that?

Me: Don't sound surprised it was expected!

She laughed..

Me: Shame maan she's all crying and everything..
You should see her (laughing)

Alf: I mean she should suck it up, I've seen the girl she really thought she would get it on with a guy like him?

Me: She's delusional!

Alf: She was delusional from the word go

Me: Let me go back, I'll see you later

Alf: Okay friend

I hung up and walked back in...

AISHA

I don't even know what to say to my Mother, I got missed calls from her. My Sister is going to say "I told you so"

Ase: Call your Mom, tell her you were sick and got admitted they only released you now

Me: I've never lied to her

Ase: You will have too, for now

Me: Okay

I got up..

Me: Please come and stand with me outside, I'm scared what if Virgo shows up?

Ase: Of course

Po walked in, we walked out..

We got out and I called my Mother..

Ma: Sontoki, I've been worried. Tried calling you but you didn't answer

Me: Yaa uhm.. I'm not feeling well

Ma: What's wrong?

Me: I ate food from the cafeteria, woke up with a terrible stomach bug I was admitted

Ma: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: Yes.. They discharging me now

Ma: I should come and see you

Me: I'm good now Ma

Ma: Please come visit home this weekend

Me: I'll do so

Ma: Ube right maan

Me: I will be

Ma: I'll call you back later

Me: Okay.. I love you

Ma: I love you too

I hung up..

Ase: It's going to be okay, it's going to be okay

Me: How did I become that girl? That girl that gets abused?

Ase: it can happen to anyone, at least you saw the signs early

Me: I hope I get through this

Ase: You will.. You will..

.

To be continued

Bonus to follow up later

[03/14, 21:57] : 30

AISHA

When I got to Res, I laid on my bed and cried.

I cried so much that I even got hiccups..

When I left home, my goal, my sole goal was to study. Graduate and get a job. It took me a lot to get here and I made a promise that I will work hard to make myself proud and my family proud. Education is the only thing that no one can take away from me, unless I give them that power..

Meeting Virgo, ending up in this situation..

This was not part of the plan.. He kept on calling, so much I put my phone on silent. He sent endless messages asking where I am, telling me Po and Ase came back to class..

He makes my heart beat fast, not love activated but out of fear. I fear him, I remember when he slapped me, when he locked me up, when he insulted me..

Those memories overpowered the good times that we both shared. I went straight on Facebook and deleted any post and picture that reminded me of him and the times we spent..

I also deserve love, I also deserve to be loved. After everything I've been through, God can't come through for me? God can't restore and heal my pain by giving me all my heart's desires? A career and

love? He made me this way, he created me this way.
Was it all for mockery? For his sense of humour?

Why did he bring Virgo my way if he knows that he was going to hurt me? Why? I've been faithful to him. I've served him, believed in him. Why can't he just replace our pain with good? Replace our tears with joy? For my sake, for his faithful servant my Mother!!

I hugged the pillow more tighter..

VIRGO

I made my to Ase..

Me: Hi

She was sitting in the lecture hall busy reading her notes..

It was during lunchtime..

Me: Ase

She looked at me..

Ase: May I help you?

Me: Where is Aisha?

Ase: I don't know.. She's your girlfriend can't you call or text her and ask?

Me: Her phone.. She's not picking up

Ase: Weird.. Because I called her a few minutes ago and she picked up

Me: Okay look.. I'm not going to go back and forth with you, where is Aisha?

Ase: I don't know

Po walked in..

Po: Hey

Me: Hi

Po: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

Po: Okay

I looked at Po, she looked down..

Me: I like how you did your hair today

Po: Really?

Me: Yeah it suits you

Po: Thank you (Smiling)

Me: I actually was looking for Aisha, we have clinicals in the afternoon.. Wanted to make sure she's okay

Po: She left early and went to Res

Ase looked at her..

Ase: Are you serious right now?

I smiled a little and winked at her before going out..

Ase: I can't believe you did that!

Po: What? She lives in Res doesn't she? Where else would she go?

I walked out and stood next to the door to listen to them..

Ase: After what he did to her?

Po: I find it hard to believe that he actually did all those things to her

Ase: Are you kidding me?

Po: What if he dumped her and she wasn't happy then decided to lie on him? We talking about the same girl who slept over at his place after what? 3 seconds of them dating?

Ase: She was terrified, you saw her! You can't fake that!

Po: Look she's without a bruise, without anything to evidence her story

Ase: I can't believe you right now! A woman saying that

Po: Agh please!

I smiled and walked away...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Bomi came back, I was chilling by the pool

Bomi: Get dressed, we going

Me: She knocks off at 16:00

Bomi: Get dressed we going

I got up..

Bomi: I'll wait for you in the car

Me: Fine

She walked away. I shook my head, let me get this over and done with so she could lay off on me with this...

AISHA

I checked my phone, I had a notification..

I checked, it was a bank notification of R1500. A text accompanied it from Virgo..

"I know you left with not much clothes, replace your wardrobe"

I deleted the message. I don't know his bank account, he's definitely not using Capitec for me to transfer it back to him using his number...

Another message came through:

"I understand if you don't wanna be with me anymore, if I was you I wouldn't wanna be with me too.. I'm sorry for everything I've put you through, I wish I could do things differently. I'm truly sorry and I wish you can forgive me one day.. I love you so much, always know that"

I deleted the message after reading it..

VIRGO

She wasn't texting back, I don't know if she was reading my messages or not. Whatsapp messages she wasn't replying to them..

It was upsetting, this is still early. It's early for us to break up, it's early for her to realize her worth..

Dammit! She's a girl with a broken self esteem, there has to be a way to get through to her. A way to get to her, can't be defeated by a ordinary girl who doesn't possess anything special other than her brains!!

KOKETSO (KETSO)

No word was shared as we drove to my place, I was scared. Scared of the outcome, scared of what

Bomi will hear..

My Mother is very gifted verbally, she will say things and actually have you believe them..

Me: I'm sorry about last night, I know that you meant no harm.. Sometimes hormones get in the way and I just.. I'm truly sorry

Bomi: It's okay.. I understand

VIRGO

We were at the clinics, I'm due to work alone today. Aisha wasn't here.. She usually does all the work and I get the signature, I didn't know how to position the machine. I didn't know the angles.. I looked at the image, it was skewed..

Me: Fuck (whispering)

Patient: Do we have to do it again?

Me: Yes

Patient: This is for the 3rd time!

Me: You moved

Patient: I didn't

Futhi: Hey

Me: Hey

Futhi: Are you going to be done soon? I wanna use the machine for my Patient

Me: I'll be done

Futhi: Okay

Patient: My Doctor is waiting for the X-ray upstairs!
They need to start with my procedure

Me: I know.. Please let's try it again

Patient: Do you even know what you are doing?

Me: Please go back under the machine

She went back..

Me: Bite with your front teeth here on this block

She did..

Me: Move your chin forward

She did..

Me: Again

Patient: I did

Me: Don't talk just follow instructions

Patient: Okay

Me: Okay we good

I went to the exposure room and exposed.

I looked at her..

Patient: It touched my shoulder, hey it touched my shoulder again!

Me: Don't fucken move (whispering)

Patient: It touched my shoulder again!

I looked down and exhaled in Frustration..

I went back to her, she got out of the machine..

Patient: It touched me

Me: That's because you moving

Our lecturer walked in..

Her: Virgo others are waiting

Patient: It keeps on touching my shoulder, he doesn't know what he's doing

Me: She's moving

The Lecturer looked at the image and shook her head..

Lecturer: Mam please get in the machine again

The patient did..

Lecturer: They need to see the impacted teeth, they need to see how bad the case is for extraction.. We need a smile on the image

I nodded..

Lecturer: The Patient is tall, ask her to bend a little..

Mam please bend a little

The patient did..

Lecturer: Please bite here not too much

Patient bit...

Lecturer: Frankfort line in the middle of the ear and just below the eye like that, horizontal line separates the face it's in the middle of the face check with the nose it will guide you well

She positioned the patient well..

Lecturer: You don't move the machine you move the patient

Me: Okay

Lecturer: Let's go and expose

We went to expose..

Lecturer: See it's not touching her on the shoulders and we have a beautiful smile

I really need Aisha back this is embarrassing!

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:57] : 31

BOMI (VIRGO'S MOTHER)

I am very aware of the agenda most girls that dated my Son had. Virgo is a good looking young man who comes from a wealthy background. Most of the girls who come his way are in it for the money.. They don't usually last, my Son is a very difficult Person to deal with and parts of him being this way is because of me. Honestly speaking I never had intentions of having a child at that time, when I found out that I couldn't abort, I panicked. My mother already noticed that I was pregnant and there was no pulling back.

Our Great ancestor, was Married to a white Man. How they made it work with him, I will never know. He was of the Dutch Origin hence our genes...I was never fully interested in the family history because we don't even know that side of our family, all I know is that they had at least 5 kids. 3 boys and 2 girls. Their marriage didn't last for that long, they separated after they had their 5th and last baby of which my Great ancestor moved back home to the Eastern Cape.. It all circles around the Apartheid Era, there's a lot that went down there and I am not entirely interested in the history..

It hurts a lot knowing what I've put my Son through, a boy needs his Father and he never got that. My future relationships didn't even work out too, all those men were in and out of my life and Virgo's life so it was a mess.

I do what I do for him because I'm trying so hard to

mend our relationship, he hates me I know. I don't blame him, I've put him through a lot...

I didn't expect Koketso to be from such humble beginnings, she comes across as someone who comes from a good financial stable background from how she carries herself and how she wears and takes care of herself...

The tension in the room, you could cut it with a knife no one had said anything as yet. This woman sitting across us was fuming deep down, if I wasn't in the room. She would skip through and strangle her Daughter to death

Me: Eeerr.. My name is Bomi Swartbooi, I am Ludwe's Mother. We stumbled upon the revelation that he has impregnated your Daughter Ketso She didn't say anything, she just looked at me..

Me: Koketso came to my house with the statement

that you.. You kicked her out

She chuckled and folded her arms..

Me: As a Mother and an Adult, It didn't feel right for me to stay with your daughter without you knowing about it. I'm here to find out what happened

Her: She said I kicked her out? That statement is new to my ears.. I nevertheless kicked her out, she packed up and left on her own and attacked me physically

I looked at Kets o..

Me: You attacked your Mother?

Her: She threw me down, my hip still hurts

Me: That's not what I heard Moss

Her: That's what happened? Am I lying Kets o?

Kets o kept quiet..

Me: After hearing this, I'm not comfortable with you staying at my place. You told my Son that I mistreated you whilst that didn't happen. I am comfortable with helping out when my Grandchild is born and also helping now with medical expenses but I don't think you can continue to live with me, I don't trust you

Ketso: This is exactly what you wanted Angithi? You wanted to kick me out but didn't know how so you resorted to this.. Come here and gang up on me, how is your Son going to feel about this matter when he hears about it? You are going to lose your Son and it'll be all on you!

Me: I think I heard what I needed to hear, thank you for your time and..

I took out an envelope..

Me: This will cover the clothes you left at my house,
I don't want you back there again

Ketso: What?

Me: You are poison

Ketso: You are not even the best mother! You don't
even know who Virgo's father is

Her Mother looked at her..

Her: Hey!! Bomi is not your age mate!

Me: Yes I don't know who his father is but at least
I'm doing good with my Son and I've never
disrespected my Mother

I got up..

Me: Nisale kahle Ma (Thank you)

Kets o: You did the biggest mistake of your life I tell you! Wait until Virgo hears this you will never see him again!!!! Do you hear me? You'll never see him again!

I checked my phone, it has been recording this whole time. I sent to Virgo and walked out..

AISHA

Ase was in my room telling me about the events of today and what happened at the clinics. I laughed..

Ase: The lecturer had to carry him through, the embarrassment!!

Me: You lie

Ase: It was embarrassing friend

Me: I can imagine

Ase: I thought when you guys carry out your clinicals he helps and what not?

Me: Kuphi I usually do everything

Ase: That's why he's not learning Moss

Me: I'm failing to believe that Virgo is not smart, he's from an expensive private school. I've seen a Pic of him in uniform I searched the school it's pretty expensive. School fees is 9k a month

Ase: 9k for Virgo to know nothing

Me: Don't say such things maybe he's still learning

Ase: Hai we will see

VIRGO

I was upset twice, first from what happened at the clinics and now hearing this.. I called my Mother..

Bomi: Virgo

Me: I listened to it, I'm sorry

Bomi: Are we even sure the baby is yours?

Me: I'm not sure just didn't want my baby growing up without a father if he's mine

Bomi: How about we wait for the baby to be born first and then do a DNA test

Me: That's better

Bomi: Ludwe I don't want her staying at my house she's dangerous

Me: I understand

Bomi: I left her at her home

Me: You did good

Bomi: Wena are you okay?

Me: I don't know

Bomi: What's wrong?

Me: I know you want me to be at school but Bomi it's hard.. This course is difficult I can't

Bomi: Don't say that

Me: I promise you, I just wanna come back home on the other hand I've messed things up with Aisha she was a good girlfriend and a good study partner.. I really don't know

Bomi: What happened?

Me: Just a lot I don't know

Bomi: Can't you fix things?

Me: She's had enough

Bomi: Aisha looks like someone who comes from a difficult background and that is good, you can manipulate them with money.. She's a lovely girl, she's smart, respectful and ambitious you really had a good girlfriend and that's the type of girl deserving of our surname

Me: I don't know how to fix this, I need her. We partner up on a lot of things and I feel she can also help me get into BDS next year

Bomi: Are you sure about this girl?

Me: Very sure

Bomi: Okay I'll help but I don't wanna help then you play her

Me: I love her and I wanna be with her, no one else

Bomi: Okay.. I'll help just keep your head up

Me: Okay

Bomi: I'll call you again

Me: Okay

Bomi: I love you

Me: I love you too

AISHA

Ase was walking me back to my room when I received a call from Bomi..

Me: I have to take this

Ase: Okay I'll see you tomorrow morning at school

Me: Okay bye

I answered..

Me: Hello

Bomi: Aisha how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Bomi: I'm good was checking up on you

Me: Ohw.. Thank you

Bomi: You okay?

Me: I'm fine

Bomi: Virgo told me that you two are having problems

Me: Sort off

Bomi: I just want to know that whatever happens between you two, it won't affect our newly found friendship and relationship. I adore you Aisha and the time we spent, I felt like I had a Daughter. I've always wanted a Daughter

Me: I enjoyed too

Bomi: Talk again.. Enjoy your night

Me: You too

Bomi: Bye

Me: Bye

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:57] : 32

AISHA

The following morning I prepared myself for school, after I had woken up and prayed. I realized that Bomi had sent me a message, it was more of an affirmation which read:

"Wake up knowing that you are beautiful, you hold potential to become something better than the goals you set for yourself. Go through this day and

don't allow anyone to steal a part of your happiness. People can only hurt you to the extent that you allow them too, don't allow yourself to shed tears nor be unhappy because of another person. In everything, always protect your peace and sanity"

It was a beautiful affirmation that I read out a few times, all the way to the bus...

I don't know how this day is going to workout, especially since Virgo and I we not in the best terms. I hope he won't be a thorn under my feet..

The bus arrived at school and the walk to class was a dreadful one, my mind was all over the place and my heart was not at ease.

Ase was already in class, our first class was a combined one. Dental therapy, Oral Hygiene and Bachelor of Dentistry..

Me: When did you get here?

Ase: I took the first bus

Me: That's why

Ase: How are you feeling?

Me: We will see how the day goes

People started to fill up the hall, then Virgo walked in. He had a bucket hat on, that he lowered all the way down. My heart started to beat very fast, Ase held my hand..

Ase: It's okay

He sat right behind me, I could feel the hairs at the back of my neck standing up. I tried so hard to ignore the fear, and when the lecture started my fear siezed a little..

He joined in, in his row by his friends. It made the situation more unsettling...

The class was an hour, we were instructed to read up more on the topic we handled this morning as we are going to have a quiz on our next class...

The rest of us attending went okay, he wasn't breathing through my neck. He actually gave me peace and that was what I was yearning for...

During lunchtime we set off to the cafeteria, and we ordered Galitos..

Ase: You doing good

Me: You think?

Ase: Yes

Me: I'm glad he gave me a breather

Ase: Yaa that's what we want right?

Me: Right

POZIS WA

I don't know how Futhi pulled it off, but she switched groups for Radiography and she came to ours. She was my partner..

We were sitting in the lecture hall and talking, I was telling her about Virgo and Aisha..

She was laughing her lungs out like a mad goat..

Futhi: Virgo is very arrogant what was Aisha thinking

Me: I have no idea what she was thinking

Futhi: Shame Skepsel bantu

We laughed..

Me: She's very boring shame, being her friend is tiring and it's very boring. She thinks highly of herself

Futhi: Just because she has a bit of brains she thinks she's all that

Me: I wish she goes back so Virgo can crush her more and she fails so she can understand the real life

Futhi: That's brutal

Me: And her ass sucking friend

Futhi: That one bores me to death

Me: Miss goody two shoes

Futhi: Mam'Fundisi (A Pastor's wife)

Me: All that's missing is a Bible

Futhi: I'm telling you

Me: I like you, I think we can be good friends

Futhi: I think so too

VIRGO

I kept on checking if Aisha was online, I even went as far as downloading Facebook just to stalk her. Her account is private so my Facebook request is still pending..

She didn't seem like she was hurt by our fall out, life seemed to be normal for her..

I might've been an ass yes, but we shared good times! That's gotta count for something right? Why isn't she sobbing, why isn't she showing any signs of hurt? I'm out here losing my mind over this and she seems okay

J o: Your mind seems to be far away

I looked at him..

Mo: What's on your mind?

Me: I broke up with my girlfriend

Mo: The pregnant one?

Me: No the.. Actually that was my Ex

J o: Uhm okay

Me: The girl I broke up with is.. Her name is Aisha she's in my class

J o: I don't know her

I got her picture and showed them, J o whistled..

J o: The breasts

This is what I was scared of..

J o: They beautiful, she's beautiful

Mo: They big but not unattractive big

J o: They perfect

Mo: You only saying that because white guys are more attracted by beasts than anything

J o: I'm being for real, she's beautiful

Mo: That she is

J o: Why did you guys break up?

They gave me my phone back..

J o: She's really beautiful

Mo: Very beautiful

That was strange..

AISHA

Me: Where is Po?

Ase: That one has been hanging around with Futhi,
they even Partners in Radiography

Me: How come? Isn't she in group A?

Ase: I don't know how she pulled it off

Me: Something is off with her

Ase: Thought I was the only one who was seeing

that

Me: Hai we will see where they going to end up

Ase: True

My phone beeped.. It was a whatsapp message from Virgo:

"I miss you"

I only read and delete.. I don't reply

I saw that he was typing:

"Can we at least be civil towards each other?"

I swallowed..

Ase: What's our next class?

Me: Huh?

Ase: Our next class

Me: Uhm.. I'm not really sure

Ase: You good?

I put my phone away..

Me: Yeah I'm good.. Sorry about that

Ase: Okay

VIRGO

So basically this is how much love hurts?

She wasn't replying to my messages, she has disabled the "read option" I don't know if she was reading, but I believe she was. She is, because after sending she'll be online, then go off again..

J o: How deep was the breakup?

Me: Pretty deep

J o: That's why you so miserable?

Mo: Why don't you just talk to her

Me: She doesn't wanna talk

J o: Then give her time to think things through and calm down

Mo: I support that, unless you cheated

Me: I didn't cheat

J o: Then it'll be fixed

Me: We'll see

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:57] : 33

AISHA

School wasn't bad, Virgo gave me peace..

He didn't bother me and I was able to get through the day..

We were done with classes and we were about to leave for the bus. Everyone I had went out and I packed up my things putting them back in my bag. I picked up my bag from the table and when I turned I bumped into Virgo.. I stepped back a little with my heart racing.. He extended his hand and held my arm..

Virgo: I'm sorry.. Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

He cleared the locks that came over and crowded my face, he cleared them to the back of my ear..

Virgo: I'm sorry again

Me: It's okay

He smells nice, I like the smell of his cologne

Me: I.. I have to go

Virgo: Yes I'm sorry

I tried to move but we kept on bumping into each other, it was ridiculous. He chuckled.

Virgo: Let me move

He stepped aside, then I walked out of the lecture hall..

Ase: I was wondering what was taking so long

Me: I'm good let's go

We walked to the bus..

VIRGO

This week the list for the Oral hygiene clinicals is coming out. I made my way to the HOD, I knocked at her door..

Her: Come in

I made my way in..

Me: Good afternoon Mrs Ibrahim

Her: Good afternoon

I sat down..

Me: My name is Virgo, Virgo Swartbooi. I'm in the BDT group

Her: How may I help you?

Me: I believe that the list for the Oral Hygiene clinicals is coming up?

Her: Tomorrow afternoon

Me: This might sound off but.. May I be paired with Aisha?

Her: I don't understand

Me: We already paired in Radiography and she's a very shy person, she would be uncomfortable with someone else

Her: Ohw I see.. I'll pair you together, just write your

names here

She handed me the paper and pen..

Me: Thank you

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I was in my room going crazy.. My Mother walked in..

Ma: Yeeey stop ruining my furniture, you didn't buy the bed, you didn't but the dressing table, you bought nothing!

Me: Why do you hate me so much? Why didn't you just lie at least?

Ma: Lie about what? Vele unomoya omubi! (you are cruel)

Me: I left your house! Why do you always have to ruin everything for me?

Ma: Ruined what? You brought this woman into my house!!

Me: You are evil I hate you!!

I threw my body lotion at her..

Ma: Yewena!!

She walked up to me..

Me: I will kill you! I will kill you!!

I moved backwards and took the side lamp, I hit her on the head with it..

Ma: Ahhhhh!!

Me: Why don't you just leave me alone??

Ma: You are cursed!! You are a cursed child!!

I clicked my tounge and walked out..

AISHA

I was in the bus on a call with my Sister, she kept on asking about Virgo that I told her..

Sis: This is what I was scared of

Me: It's alright.. I'm done with him

Sis: Aisha I'm not saying you are ugly, but Sis be vigilant when a guy walks up to you. A handsome, well stable guy like Virgo? You really didn't think that he was into you right?

Me: Why wouldn't he be?

Sis: Look at him, look at you

Me: Ohw

Sis: These guys have Agendas he probably was with you because he couldn't get someone as yet. He just wanted you for sex nothing more, he was using you only for sex

Me: You don't have to worry, Virgo and I we done

Sis: I'm glad.. Focus on school, imagine coming back here pregnant or a dropout

Me: That won't happen

Sis: Good! It would be an embarrassment for us and yourself, Mom would be disappointed she will have

a heart attack

Me: I know Thobeka! I'm not stupid

Sis: In this case you are, Love can make you stupid

Me: I left him didn't I?

Sis: I'm not fighting with you, I'm on your side

Me: Sometimes it feels like you fighting with me

Sis: I'm not

Me: Can we talk later?

Sis: Okay bye

Me: Bye

I hung up..

Ase: Everything okay?

Me: Just my Sis, sometimes I feel like she's an enemy!

Ase: Hai family

VIRGO

I was driving back home when I received a call from Kets o.. I put her on loudspeaker..

Me: Hi?

Kets o: Ohh my word!

Me: What?

Kets o: Your Mother is evil, she knows I told her about my situation at home but she dropped me off here at my house for my Mother to come at me!

Me: Is it?

Kets o: My Mother just attacked me, I'm running down the street scared and I'm in pain.. Virgo I feel like I'm going to lose my baby

Me: My Mother did what?

Kets o: She's evil! She's no different from my Mother! I didn't expect her to accept me at least tolerate me for the sake of my baby, our baby

Me: So what you want me to do?

Kets o: What do you mean? I have nowhere to go!

Me: How is that any of my business?

Kets o: Virgo!!

Me: My Mother sent me the conversation, what happened at your house. Can't believe you almost turned me and my mother against each other

Kets o: Virgo

Me: Leave me alone, you and I we will talk when the baby is born after a DNA test

I hung up...

KOKETSO (KETSO)

I was sitting on the stoep, my plan is crashing down really bad..

This is not happening..

I received a call from my sister..

Me: Seipati

Her: You attacked my Mother?

Me: Ohw

Her: She just called me crying and in pain

Me: Your Mother is evil

Her: You are evil! You are a curse in our family.. I can't believe you and I are siblings

Me: Me too hey

Her: I'm on my way there, I hope it'll be gone by then

Me: This is also my home! I'm not going anywhere

Her: Okay we will see

Me: Right back at you!

She hung up..

.

To be continued

Bonus coming later

[03/14, 21:57] : 34

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My Mother was in her moods after our anticipated fight, she locked herself in the room and didn't come out. I didn't really care because I feel a part of her ruined what I was creating myself a perfect family, a stable home and a stable future for my Son..

How am I to raise him without a Father? Without knowing who his Father is? No money, no form of support and I should've seen that bitch Bomi coming for me..

My Sister did arrive, she was fuming..

Seipati: I want you out, I want you out of my Mother's house! I want you out right now!

She has no right to throw me out of my Mother's house, it's also my house. I have a right to stay here..

I was picking up the broken pieces of what used to be my Lamp..

Seipati: Are you hearing me?

Me: I've been through the most today, please I don't want any drama from you

Seipati: What drama? Drama that you caused?
Drama that you created?

My Mother walked in, her forehead had a bump..

Ma: She tried to kill me! Usathane Lento! (she's the devil)

Me: You were about to attack me, I was defending myself!

Ma: I did no such thing!!

She looked at my Sister..

Ma: Seipati I want this girl out of my house before she kills me!

Seipati: You heard Mom! Leave

Me: And go where?

Seipati: You should've thought about that before attacking my Mother!

Me: Can't you guys just give me a breather?

Seipati: This is getting tiring

She walked up to me and grabbed my arm..

Seipati: Tsamaya maan!! Fela pleke!! (leave)

Me: You hurting me!

I tried to push her off and get away from her group, she let go and pushed me away from her hard. I landed on the floor on my tummy.

Me: Ahhhhh!!!!!!!

AISHA

I was taking a break from studying decided to browse through social media, on Instagram it showed Virgo uploaded 3 pictures. I must admit he

was looking like a snack. He was from the shower, his upper body was wet. That hairy aligned vertical part of him, from below his belly button extending all the way down.. His wet hair, him biting his lower lip..

It was a lot of heat to handle and comments were flooding through, I just liked it and continued with my life..

On whatsapp it was more torture, pictures and a video with a song playing at the background. It was too much to handle for one Person. Why does he have to look this good but be so vile? I don't understand..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

The sharp pain that was arising from my tummy was unbearable, not to mention the bleeding. I was

screaming in pain, I can't lose my baby.. This was my only male ticket, it could be Virgo's baby and now I'll never get my fortune should he die..

My Sister had called an Ambulance, and I feel she was delaying on purpose. She knows that Ambulances take time, she could use her car..

Seipati: Ketso I'm sorry.. Hold on help is on the way

Ma: Put a pillow behind her

Seipati: Okay

Me: Just take me to the hospital please, I don't wanna lose my baby (crying)

Seipati: We can't move you, you bleeding.. We could cause more damage

She came with the pillow, she put it behind me..

Me: Please take me to the hospital, I don't wanna lose my baby (crying)

VIRGO

I realized that Aisha accepted my friend request on Facebook, it's good. That's a good sign I think.

I went and liked all the pictures she's posted, I didn't wanna cloud her and make her uncomfortable it might scare her off..

I decided to let her be for now, I also realized that she viewed my whatsapp status uploads

I viewed hers too, she uploaded a random picture. I replied:

"Beautiful"

I expected her to ignore as always, but she replied back:

"Thank you"

I decided then to take my chance..

"Good for a call"

She took time to respond to that message, but she finally replied:

"Okay"

I called her right away, she didn't pick up right away. She let it ring for a while first..

Aisha: Hi

Me: Ms pretty thang

Aisha: Hey

Me: You good?

Aisha: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good

The call was awkward, more especially since what happened..

Me: What are you doing?

Aisha: Taking a break from studying, you?

Me: J ust chilling and bored

Aisha: Shame

Me: Aisha

Aisha: Yes?

Me: I'm sorry about everything

Aisha: Why? Why did you do that?

Me: The honest truth is that I.. My Mother had a one night stand in her varsity years, she fell pregnant. Pregnant with me, by the time she wanted to abort. It was too late, so she had no choice but to live with her mistake. After she had given birth to me, she dumped me to my Grandmother that was following previous abortions that she had.

I feel if my Grandmother didn't intervene, she could've dumped me somewhere, killed me or left me at the hospital. I grew up without knowing my Father, it's something that made me the angry Person that I am today

She exhaled..

Aisha: That is heavy

Me: When those thoughts visit me, I lose myself and become angry then I hurt the ones I love

Aisha: Have you tried therapy?

Me: No.. I didn't see a reason too.. When you didn't deal with my nonsense that's when I realized that if

I don't do something about it, I'll keep on losing the People who matter the most. My relationships were never stable, I come off as cold hearted I know but after our fallout I felt pain because I love you, I love you so much.. I don't expect you to be with me but I do pray you will find someone who will love you better, you deserve to be loved better

Aisha: I loved you, I was good to you

Me: I know.. I blame no one but myself

Aisha: Why are you telling me this now?

Me: Because you deserve to know, hence my broken relationship with my Mother

Aisha: She doesn't know your father at all?

Me: It was a one night stand

Aisha: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: It's okay, I'll get through

Aisha: I hope you do get help

Me: I will.. Thank you for picking up

Aisha: You welcome

Me: Good night

Aisha: Night

I hope she bought that, I've never been this vulnerable to another girl before only Ketso..

KOKETSO (KETS O)

The Ambulance finally arrived and I was taken straight to the hospital..

I was scared, I was very scared.. I kept my hands on my tummy..

They let me go to the hospital alone, they were scared. Scared of what they've done.

AISHA

I went back to studying but couldn't concentrate, I kept on checking out his pics and I was reminded back to all the sex we've had. In a way, it made me horny..

I kept on typing and deleting, typing and deleting..

He called, like he read my mind..

Me: Hey

Virgo: You've been typing for a while now

Me: Ohw uhm yes.. I got disturbed

Virgo: What were you typing?

Me: Nothing serious I was.. I wanted to remind you that...

Virgo: That??

I closed my eyes and sighed..

Me: Okay I.. I don't know what I wanted to text you

Virgo: That's impossible

Me: Don't make this hard

Virgo: I'm quiet

Me: Good night

Virgo: Just like that?

Me: You called me

Virgo: You were trying to text me

I laughed..

Virgo: Ladies and gentlemen, she can laugh again

Me: Don't be like that, don't be that Person

Virgo: Let's go out tomorrow morning for breakfast

Me: I really don't know

Virgo: As nothing but classmates

Me: You ask all your classmates out?

Virgo: Only the one I have a thing for

Me: I don't know about that hey

Virgo: I could use the company..

Me: Well KFC is not too bad with breakfast

Virgo: Hmmmm kfc

Me: Are you complaining?

Virgo: Oh no...Kfc is, their food is nice

Me: Have you eaten something from there?

Virgo: Of course I have!!

Me: And that was?

Virgo: Their.. You know their..I mean that thing that they serve

Me: What thing?

Virgo: Okay let's say there's going to be a first time for everything

Me: Let's go after 10am, we each get a streetwise 2

Virgo: Yeah that could work, streetwise sounds good

Me: 2 pieces of chicken you have to eat and finish both of them

Virgo: Wow...

Me: Or I could just go have breakfast at school

Virgo: No it's okay.. Kfc is fine streetwise is fine

Me: And you have to eat at the cafeteria during lunchtime

Virgo: Eish

I put my hand over my mouth trying not to laugh out loud..

Virgo: Cafeteria too.. We'll eat at the cafeteria too

Me: Okay then it's a date

Virgo: It's a date

Me: Goodnight

Virgo: Night Ms pretty thang

I hung up and laughed..

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 21:58] : 35

AISHA

By 09:00am exactly the next morning, we were at KFC. Virgo held up to the end of his deal by showing up in the morning, then we drove out to the KFC. We got the streetwise 2 and he glanced at it. Was still warm and crunchy...

Virgo: Look at that, it's.. It's..

I chuckled..

Virgo: Let's say this, how about I watch you eat it?

Me: That was not the plan

He gave me a side smile..

He extended his hand to mine and held it..

Virgo: If I eat, you will give me another chance..

Actually please give me another chance, one last

chance. If I mess up, I will let you go myself no repercussions

I got my hand from his grip..

Me: I don't know

Virgo: No repercussions I promise

Me: I am not going back to your flat

Virgo: I understand, we can do a hotel for safety reasons until that level of trust can be accomplished again

I nodded..

Me: Here, I'll put mine away and we can share yours

Virgo: That's better!

I shook my head whilst smiling..

Virgo: I'll be attending therapy, and I would like you to come with

Me: Are you serious?

Virgo: I'm serious

Me: I'll come

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I woke up from a deep sleep feeling all kinds of unsettled. I was feeling drowsy, and still yearning for more sleep.. I look around with my eyes partially opened, they were heavy to keep open.. A Nurse was standing there going through my file..

Me: Hi

Nurse: Hey.. You awake

Me: What happened?

Nurse: How are you feeling?

Me: Drowsy

Nurse: I'll get the Dr, don't panick just keep calm

Me: What happened?

Nurse: J ust keep calm

She walked out and I blinked a few times then went back to sleep..

AISHA

We drove back to school, he was holding my hand and driving with the other hand..

Me: You still fine right? No tummy ache?

Virgo: J ust a little

I laughed...

Me: You dramatic

Virgo: Can I get off the cafeteria meal?

Me: I don't know hey

Virgo: We ate KFC, that was your choice can I choose what we eat later on? It's only fair

Me: Okay you can choose

Virgo: later on at 19:00,I'll pick you up and we go eat

what I choose

Me: Okay I accept

He kissed me hand..

Virgo: Don't I have a surprise for you

I looked at him..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

The Dr walked in with the Nurse..

Dr: Good morning

I was woken up by their footsteps..

Dr: How are you feeling?

Me: What's going on? What happened?

The Dr s at down..

Dr: Do you remember how you ended up here?

I thought for a while..

Me: I was brought in, I was bleeding.. Then.. Then

you also did an Ultrasound scan, there was no heartbeat.. No heartbeat was detected

I moved my hand down to my stomach..

Me: My baby.. Is he okay?

I felt a stitch.. It was painful..

Me: My baby.. Is he okay? Did you save him?

Dr: You panicked after we told you that we couldn't hear a heartbeat. He didn't make it, we had to put you on General anesthesia and perform an emergency C-section.. I'm sorry

I shook my head..

Me: No.. No..

Dr: We can take you to see him

Me: No.. Not my baby (crying)

Dr: I'm so sorry

Me: No.. Please no.. I want my Son back! Give me back my Son!! I want my Son!!!! (screaming)

AISHA

Ase gave me a weird look as I walked into class with Virgo..

Me: Hi

Ase: Hi to you too

I took out my manual..

Ase: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Ase: He didn't bother you? Threaten you to walk into class with him?

Me: Uhm no

Ase: Okay

I didn't know how I was going to tell her this, how do you tell someone such when they have supported you??

The rest of the day went well, it was peaceful and I enjoyed it..

After our last class we went down to check the register for our Oral hygiene clinicals.

I was surprised to find out that I was paired with Virgo..

Ase: How? He's Swartbooi your surnames are far off

Me: I am shocked too

Ase: We have to go and talk to Mrs Ibrahim

Me: No it's okay

Ase: Are you sure?

Me: Can't run away from him forever right?

Ase: Right

We went and walked out of the building, Ase went to the bathroom. I told her she will find me at the Bus Station.. When I was at the entrance about to walk out, Virgo was standing there with his friends.. I didn't say anything to him, I kept my head down. I didn't wanna inconvenience him.. I was surprised when he pulled me by my arm to him and wrapped his arms around my waist..

Virgo: You were going to leave without saying Goodbye?

I was stunned, didn't know what to say..

Virgo: Remember my friends?

I looked at them..

Me: Yes

Virgo: This is my girlfriend.. Aisha, the one I was telling you boys about

Jo: Nice to meet you

Me: Me too

Mo: Thank you for taking him back, he was miserable

I chuckled..

Jo: You beautiful by the way

Me: Thank you

I blushed..

Virgo: I'll come later on to pick you up

Me: Okay

He kissed me, that was unusual. We don't publicly show our love. Never had, so I wasn't expecting this..

Virgo: I love you

Me: I love you too

Mo: 911 I think I need my girlfriend too, please send my girlfriend

We all laughed..

Virgo slowly let go of me and I walked to the Bus station, praying to not fall...

VIRGO

I watched her as she walked away, deep down I was happy. Happy that we were back together, not because we work well together but I was genuinely happy..

Jo: I heard she's one of the smartest in your program

Me: Yeah she is

Jo: There's nothing more sexy than a woman who is beautiful and has brains too

Me: That's very true

Mo: Hold on to that one, I like the fact that she's not fake. No fake plastic body, too much makeup. Simple and real

J o: No hiding behind imperfections

Mo: No trying to hide off her imperfections,
embraces her stripes, cellulite etc

J o: Exactly?

Me: I have to go guys

J o: We'll see you tomorrow, don't forget about our
tournament this coming weekend

Me: I won't

Mo: Winner takes it all

Me: That's what's up

That gave me more reason to not wanna let her go
anymore..

BOMI

My phone rang, I was on my table with my Personal
assistant. He was in between my legs..

Me: I. I have to take that

Him: Now?

Me: Could be my Son

Him: Can't you let it ring for a couple of minutes,
until we done?

He bit me on my neck..

My PA resigned about 6 months ago, I decided to
hire a male for my own benefits. He's younger than
me yes but I need some action in my life, and he's
the action. No strings attached! At least not from
my side.

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:58] : 36

AISHA

I looked at myself in the mirror. I was wearing a dress and heels. Not something too hectic, not something over the top. Just a typical dress for the occasion. I had all kinds of thoughts running through my mind right now. Am I doing the right thing by taking him back? Will it be different this time around? Am I setting myself up for more and more failure? A text came through that he was downstairs. I took a deep breath..

VIRGO

I was waiting for Aisha when I got a call from my Mother..

Me: I called you this afternoon, you didn't pick up, didn't get back to me

Ma: Ohw ya I'm sorry I was in a meeting

Me: Okay did it go well?

Ma: Went better than I expected

Me: Okay

Ma: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine, I'm actually taking Aisha out

Ma: Things are good between you two?

Me: Yes she's given us another chance

Ma: That's good.. Don't mess it up

Me: I won't

Ma: I'll transfer you money for the dinner

Me: The meeting must've went really well

Ma: Yes.. I'm in a good mood

Me: I can tell

Ma: Okay I'll transfer.. Do enjoy

Me: I will

Ma: Okay I love you

Me: I love you too

Ma: Bye

Me: Bye

That was awkward..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

The Nurse brought food for me..

Nurse: Dinner is served

Me: I'm not hungry

Nurse: You have to eat

Me: I said I'm not hungry!!

Nurse: Okay you in a hospital, please make my job easier. I understand you going through a difficult time right now but please I'm also trying to do my job

Me: You can just leave my dinner there.. Thank you

Nurse: We try our best and you guys make it difficult for us then tomorrow it'll be "Nurses are rude"

She put my food next to my bed ontop of the small

cabinet..

Nurse: Good night!

She walked out..

AISHA

I made my way out and he was standing by the car..

Me: Hey

He looked at me..

Virgo: Hey yourself

Me: Are you ready to go?

Virgo: Yes, and you?

Me: I'm ready

Virgo: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you.. You handsome as always

Virgo: Thank you

He opened the door and I got in, he closed it and came all around. Then we drove out to our destination..

He took me out to this classy restaurant..

Very beautiful but also made me feel very small..

A song was playing when we walked in, not too loud as to bother the customers..

"I think it's time you admit that I'm the only one for you yeah

And I think it's time, you let go of all your fears

And just trust me babe 'cause I know your heart

And I know this isn't what you're meant to do

You have pure intentions, what is the issue?

So just open up and let me see inside

Maybe you should just put your pride aside

But as for me you're the one

And in my heart our time will come

'Til the end I'ma always be right by your side

But as for me you're the one

And in my heart our time will come

'Til the end I'ma always be right by your side"

We were shown to our table, he opened the chair and I sat down. It was a bit dark but candles were lit and the light bulbs on the walls..

I picked up the menu..

Virgo: Eerr what are you doing?

Me: Checking out the menu

Virgo: No we eating what I'm going to order, remember?

Me: Ohw

I put the menu back on the table..

Virgo turned to the waitress..

Virgo: Please start us off with Oysters

Me: Huh?

Virgo: Oysters please

Waitress: Okay

Virgo: And a bottle of white wine

Waitress: Coming right up

She left, I looked at him..

Virgo: Ohw and please do eat all of them

Me: Those things look disgusting

Virgo: A deal is a deal

He picked up the menu..

Me: And what are you doing?

Virgo: Ordering something for myself

Me: Wait what? We supposed to eat them together

Virgo: That was never said

Me: I ate with you

Virgo: It was your choice

Me: I don't get it

He closed the menu..

Virgo: You wanted me to try out KFC and you offered to eat with me, you could've ordered something else for yourself the KFC meal was meant for me remember?

I couldn't believe this..

Virgo: Ohh I'm sorry I didn't get that, where's the come back?

I took the napkin and put it on my thighs..

Virgo: What? No come back?

Me: No.. Nothing at all

Virgo: Wow! Never saw that one coming

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I could still use this to my advantage. It could work. Virgo really wanted this baby until of course his Mother interfered, I could still use the death of my Son against him..

I just hope it works..

AISHA

He was serious about his deal. I was having Oysters and he was eating prawns..

I looked at them, they were slimy and resting on ice. They gave me a blood rush just by looking at them..

Virgo: Let's go

I took one..

Virgo: You just down it, you don't have to chew

I took one..

Virgo: Come on I'm vouching for you

I downed it down, swallowed it quicker. At least it was slimy and went down well, it didn't stuck on my throat. I took the glass of water and drank from it..

He got his phone and took a video..

Virgo: Ladies and gentlemen this is my girlfriend trying out Oysters, come on Miss Pretty thang at least down down 3

Me: 3?

Virgo: Yes they equivalent to the chicken you made me eat

Me: These things are.. Can't we try something else?

Virgo: No Baby, a deal is a deal.. At least now you

know how I feel

I took another one and downed it down, but it threatened to come back up..

Me: I can't do this

Virgo: J ust one more to go

Me: If I don't?

Virgo: Then you sleeping over at my place tonight

I took the last one..

Virgo: So you hate me that much? I'm hurt

It was the last one, what more harm can it do??

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I got out of bed, the stitch was painful. I limped my way out of the ward to the Nurse station. So this is how a C-section feels?

They were sitting there having tea..

Me: Good evening

They looked at me..

Nurse 1: You supposed to be in bed

Me: I need to make a phone call, a serious phone call

Nurse 2: You can use the ward phone

Me: Thank you

Nurse: J ust 5min

Me: That's enough

I went to the desk and called Virgo, his phone rang until it went straight to voicemail..

"I'm at the hospital, I lost our Son"

I put the phone down..

VIRGO

After eating those Oysters she excused herself to the rest room, maybe to force herself to throw up.. I took my phone and checked, I had a voice message. I played it

"I am at the hospital, I lost our Son"

I was in shock, my heart sank. I played it over and over again..

I tried to call her but her phone was off, I called the hospital since the numbers were called out in the voice message..

No one picked up..

I saw Aisha coming back, I put my phone down..

Aisha: Remind me next time to never do a deal like that with you

Me: You okay?

Aisha: I'm good.. But I swear I can feel them moving in my tummy

Me: Can I call my Mother?

Aisha: Yes

Me: I'll be back

I got up and went to make the call..

Bomi: Baby is everything okay?

Me: Ketso lost the baby

Bomi: What?

Me: She called me from the hospital

Bomi: When? Which hospital

Me: I'm not sure I can't get a hold of her

Bomi: I'll pass by at her house tomorrow and check

Me: Thank you

I hung up and went back to the table

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:58] : 37

AISHA

After our night we drove back to Res..

Me: Thank you for the dinner, though it was uncomfortable

He chuckled..

Virgo: But you went through it like it was nothing

Me: I forced through it

Virgo: Either way you pulled through

Me: Yaa.. It was nice

Virgo: I enjoyed too

Me: I should go, get some rest

Virgo: Good night

Me: Good night

He came closer for a kiss with his hand squeezing my thigh..

Virgo: Have a good night

Me: You too

Virgo: I love you

Me: I love you too

I got out of the car, he only left when I got inside and then drove off...

NOBOMI

The following morning before going to work, I drove out to Ketso's house to find out what happened. I was lucky to find her Mother at home..I told her about the call, she told me that her and Ketso got into a physical altercation and Ketso hit her with a lamp then she pushed her, and Ketso fell.

She had a bandage around her forehead, to prove her story. The Sister was the one who took the Mother to the hospital.. This was a dreadful situation, I don't know who does this. Sad as it is, I'm just glad Ludwe dodged the bullet. There's nothing and I mean nothing bounding them together now. My Son is free from this crazy girl and I'm happy

Me: I will pay for the funeral, that's the least I could do

Her: Thank you so much, I'd appreciate that

Me: These are my numbers you can call me when she gets home, I don't wanna crowd her at the hospital for now

Her: I understand

I left her my number...

AISHA

This morning we were set to start our first class on Operative Dentistry. We were a mixed group that consisted of BDS, BDT, and BOH students. It was 5 girls and 3 guys in our group, we were doing sterilization. Taught how to sterilize instruments. I didn't know anyone in this group except for one Person, J o. Virgo's friend.. He saw that I was standing alone, he came up to me..

J o: Hi

Me: Hi

J o: J onathan

Me: Aisha, we've met before

J o: Was making sure that you got my name

Me: I got it now

This was awkward, he just became nice to me unprovoked..

J o: How do you feel about the scrubs ?

Me: Make me feel like I'm a patient at some hospital

He laughed..

J o: Thought I was the only one

We were wearing scrubs. Girls were wearing green dresses and gowns, guys pants and t-shirts. Then the hats..

J o: I see an open station, wanna join?

Me: Uhm yeah why not

We went to the open station, we were washing the instruments in the sink before they go to the

machine..

We washed the instruments whilst chatting, he was a good companion no lie....

We went through everything just talking which made the situation more easier.

After an hour, the session was over. We went to change in different rooms then walked out of the sterilization room..

Me: I can't believe that we have next week of this and the other week

J o: I know.. I wonder how the others are holding up

Me: They must be lucky

J o: It's not difficult

Me: Not at all just a lot of work

We went and stood at the entrance waiting for people we know..

J o: I hope I'm not keeping you from your next class

Me: Ohw no.. I'm waiting for my friend

J o: Okay

Me: You don't have a class?

J o: No.. We free until lunch

Me: You guys don't seem like you have a lot of work cut out for you

J o: We have 4 years more to go so..

Me: That's true

We saw Virgo walking in with a couple of people..

J o: Ohw here they are

He looked at us..

Virgo: Uhm Good morning

We greeted him back..

Mo: Good morning

We also greeted him back..

Me: I should go, Ase is probably waiting for me

Jo: See you next week

Me: Okay

I walked to class..

VIRGO

I looked at Aisha walking away..

Mo: How was sterilization?

Jo: Lot of work, CPR?

Mo: It was okay

Me: So you and Aisha?

Jo: Ohwya, she's in my group

Me: I see.. Well I gotta get going might be late for

my next class

Mo: Ayt man see you during lunchtime

Me: Ayt

I walked to class...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Dr: I wanna suggest therapy for you

Me: I don't need therapy

Dr: You went through a traumatic experience

Me: I wanna see my baby, can I?

Dr: Yes you can

Me: I don't want the Hospital to cremate him, I want a proper home burial for him

Dr: Of course

Me: Thank you

Dr: The Nurse will come and take you

Me: I also wanna get out of here, to go bury him

Dr: I will discharge you soon

AISHA

Ase is in the CPR group..

Me: How is it going?

Ase: Not bad today it was the introduction

Me: Well we are cut out for a lot of work

Ase: I wish I was you

Me: Careful for what you wish for

Ase: I'm telling you, CPR is just boring

Me: Maybe next week it will change

Ase: Ya maybe

JONATHAN (VIRGO'S FRIEND)

Mo: So you really going after her?

Me: I believe so

Mo: Virgo is our friend

Me: Virgo is your friend, not ours

Mo: Come on Man

Me: I don't like him, he's too full of himself

Mo: Going after his girl what will that solve?

Me: When we asked him about his girlfriend the first time, he denied her.. So I don't think it's deep between them

Mo: I don't like this at all

Mo and I we've been friends since from high school, this Virgo guy. I don't like him...

AISHA

Virgo walked with me when we went for our next class..

Virgo: So how did you and J o get close?

Me: Ohw we just in the same group for sterilization

Virgo: Out of all the others, he happened to be interested in you?

I stopped and looked at him..

Me: What's wrong?

Virgo: I'm not happy about it

Me: You jealous?

Virgo: A bit

I chuckled..

Me: That's a first.. He's your friend and he knows I'm with you so relax

I gave him a kiss..

Me: Let's go to class

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:58] : 38

AISHA

A FEW DAYS LATER

J o: I brought these for you, they a bit cold now but..

He gave me the KFC brown bag..

J o: It's Dunked wings

Me: Those are my favorite, how did you know?

J o: You serious? I'm a sucker for dunked wings I got them during lunch, thought it would love them because almost everyone loves them

Me: You don't say

J o: Dunked wings, zinger burger, zinger wings, Hawaiian twister.. Those are my favorite when it

comes to the meat I prefer the side breast more

Me: Wow.. You don't come across as someone who would eat at KFC

J o: Why is that?

Me: J ust that most people don't like it

J o: I like KFC and McDonald's mostly I know a lot of people frown upon them but there's good food on their menu

Me: That's very true

He looked at me..

Me: What?

J o: I'm sorry just that.. I don't come across girls who don't do much makeup

Me: Ohw

J o: No I don't mean it in a bad way I just think that your skin is way too perfect and flawless for makeup beautiful just as you are

Me: Ohw thank you

Virgo came along..

Virgo: J o

J o: Boet!

Virgo: What are you doing? There's no Opdent
clinicals today

J o: I know was just greeting my Partner in Opdent

Virgo: I see

J o: I should go

Virgo: Yeah you should

He walked away..

Virgo: And then?

Me: He was just greeting

He looked at the KFC package..

Virgo: When did you drive out to KFC?

Me: I.. J o..

Virgo: You let J o buy you food now?

Me: He was just being nice

Virgo: J ust being nice? Aisha he's my friend

Me: I'm not dating him

Virgo: Who said anything about you two dating?

Me: You insinuating it

Virgo: Am I?

Me: Yes

Virgo: Aisha what is going on?

Me: J o is my partner in Opdent and he's helping me apply for BDS next year

Virgo: The Admin can't help with that?

Me: You are overreacting

Virgo: Am I? Do you see me being friendly friends with your friends?

Me: Maybe I should just go

I walked away and he grabbed my arm and threw me back against the wall..

Me: Ouch!!

Virgo: Don't do it, what you trying to do.. Don't do it, I love you please don't break my heart

Virgo is being unreasonable..

Virgo: J ust don't do it.. Please

He fixed his backpack and walked away...

J ONATHAN

I stood there and watched him walking away, he manhandled her.. I'm not stringing Aisha along just because I wanna diss Virgo, I like her a lot and I've noticed so far how Virgo mistreats her. I think she's a very beautiful lady, smart too and beautiful.. Calm, humble and very friendly..

I despise guys who do such nonsense to girls, he doesn't deserve her...

VIRGO

I am no fool, I can see what's happening and I don't like it.. When did Aisha wake up and realize her worth? When did Jo wake up and have a thing for my girlfriend?

I've noticed that he doesn't like me that much from the very first time we met. Mo and I clicked more than I did with Jo, I feel he strung along just because of his friend..

My phone rang..

Me: What?

Bomi: Hayi Ludwe!

Me: Uxolo (I'm sorry)

Bomi: Yintoni ingxaki? (what's wrong)

Me: Nothing just school work stressing me

Bomi: J onga.. The funeral is on Friday

Me: It's Wednesday today

Bomi: I know so tomorrow you'll have to drive down here

Me: Do I have to be there

Bomi: Ewe Ludwe! There's a possibility that he could've been your Son!

Me: Fine I'll see

Bomi: Okay ke

Me: Bye

Bomi: Bye

AISHA

Ase and I we were walking to the cafeteria to get food to eat later on at Res. She was busy talking and I wasn't even listening.. She stopped..

Me: Huh?

Ase: What's going on?

Me: Once upon a time guys didn't like me, they used to make fun of me. I came here Virgo became my worst nightmare. All of a sudden two guys are now all over me

Ase: Virgo just has to go

Me: I love Virgo, yes he's not perfect but he's trying. He has a changed now plus he's attending therapy

Ase: Ohw the group therapy must be proud to have him

Me: Ase.. I know you don't like him

Ase: And for good reasons

Me: I don't know what I'm going to do

Ase: Why are you even stressing yourself about boys

Me: I am not

Ase: Yes you are.. Girl we have a lot of shit going on academically right now and boys should be the last thing on your mind

Me: I know.. I know..

She shook her head..

VIRGO

Someone called out, I stopped. It was Po

Po: Hey

Me: Yes?

Po: Sorry to bother you, you stay in wonderpark right?

Me: Who wants to know?

Po: I wanna go to the mall, the gate is far to go and catch a taxi. Would you please give me a lift?

I looked at her..

Me: Yeah sure.. Why not

Po: Thank you

Me: Let's go

We walked to my car, she was walking in front of me. I glanced at her behind. She had a beautiful body...

AISHA

Me: I'll just get rice and chicken stew

Ase: Okay

Me: Maybe I was wrong, Virgo is right

Ase: What has Virgo been right about?

Me: This thing of me being friendly with J o, I mean I would feel some type of way if he could be friendly with you

Ase: Ohh you don't have to worry about that happening, I don't associate with jerks

I laughed..

Me: I'm serious though

Ase: So what you going to do?

Me: I just have to set boundaries with J o

Ase: Hai Aisha your problems are too much

VIRGO

I was driving and she was sitting on the passenger's seat. Short skirt, yellow thighs out in the open.. It was hard not to stare, she kept her focus on her phone..

Aisha and I we haven't been sexual for a while now following our last altercation, she is still not comfortable stopping by at the flat for a visit..

Po: Thank you again for the lift

Me: Don't mention it

Po: Taxis delay, I could've waited and waited

Me: I wouldn't know, I don't really do Taxis

Po: I get you, they are a drag

Me: it seems like it

I focused on the road again..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:59] : 39

VIRGO

I decided to go into the mall with her, just get fresh air and not go to my flat thinking about Jo and Aisha..

Me: What are you here to buy?

Po: I am going out to a wedding this weekend, family wedding. Wanted to check out a few outfits

Me: That's nice

Po: Seems expensive.. I should've considered marabastad as told

Me: I can pay

Po: Really?

Me: Yes.. A dress and shoes

Po: You really don't have too

Me: It's all good

Po: What's in it for you?

Me: Nothing maybe dinner together after the dress and shoes shopping?

Po: I can do that

Me: Beautiful!

AISHA

Virgo was quiet, it was unlike him. By now he could have texted or called me..

I called him, it rang until it went to voice mail.

I exhaled, so he is that mad?

I called my Mother..

Ma: Sontoki

Me: Ma

Ma: Unjani?

Me: I'm well and you?

Ma: I'm good

Me: I am coming over this weekend

Ma: I can't wait to see you, I've missed you

Me: I've missed you too

Ma: uRight kodwa?

Me: I'm good Ma.. Wena?

Me: I'm good.. How is Sis?

Ma: I haven't seen her in a few days

Me: Serious?

Ma: She left last weekend, she's still not back

Me: I will try and call her

Ma: She's making blood pressure to spike

Me: I'll talk to her don't worry

Ma: Okay Sisi

My Sister is back at it, stressing my Mother.

POZISWA

I fit the dress, it was perfect. The theme was royal blue, and I loved the front slit..

It was R350, the heels R600. I didn't have much

money, quite frankly coming here I was just taking my chances and now I've scored myself an outfit..

I changed the dress and walked out, Virgo was standing there..

Me: Done

He looked at me..

Virgo: You like it?

Me: Very

Virgo: Okay take the shoes and let's go

Me: Okay thank you again

Virgo: You welcome

AISHA

Bomi called me..

Me: Hello

Bomi: Aisha.. How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Bomi: I'm good.. Was just checking up on you

Me: Thank you very much, I'm well

Bomi: I'm good too.. When will you visit again?

Me: Well this weekend I'm going to visit home

Bomi: That's nice then maybe next weekend you can visit my house

Me: Okay we'll come

Bomi: Bye Nana

Me: Bye

POZIS WA

Virgo couldn't stop looking at my thighs and ass that I've noticed.. I got him exactly where I wanted him..

After he paid for the clothes we went out to eat, each time when I sit down my Skirt moves up.. It was really playing with him..

Virgo: I've never met someone this honest

Me: What do you want me to say? My boyfriend is back at home I'll be only seeing him during holidays in the course of 3 years

Virgo: That sucks

Me: Yeah it does especially since you know, a girl gotta have a bit of fun

He looked at me..

Me: I'm not looking for a relationship just a bit of fun you know

I placed my hand on his thigh..

Me: Just a no strings attached type of thing, after all you did something nice for me today

He cleared his throat and then looked around..

Virgo: Then we better get out of here

Me: I hope you have condoms

Virgo: Trust me.. I do!

AISHA

His phone took me straight to voice mail:

Me: It's me... I've been trying to get a hold of you, please call me when you get this. I miss you and I'm sorry

This was frustrating..

POZIS WA

We drove out to his flat, when we got in. We were already over each other..

Virgo: This ends between us right?

Me: Yes

I took off his belt..

I might not know Aisha's sex game but I know myself and I know that I do well in bed.

I threw him on the couch and lowered his jeans.. I lowered his briefs too and got on the side. I knelt on his side and grabbed his dick.

He ran his hand from my back all the way down, I

was still fully clothed. He moved my skirt up and squeezed my ass..

I took all of him in and he moaned..

Virgo: Fuck yesss!!

He ran his hand on my ass and spanked me I was wearing a g-string..

Virgo: Ohw yes right there baby!!

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:59] : 40

AISHA

Virgo was driving me crazy, I've been trying to get a hold of him with no success. He wasn't picking up,

he wasn't calling me back nor texting back.. Is he really that mad or has something happened to him? I didn't know what to do...

It was driving me insane, it's not like I'm dating J o he was just being friendly that's all..I don't understand why he is this mad

POZIS WA

Rating Virgo's sex game right now, he wasn't bad. I've slept with a lot of guys and I can count 5 of them who are better than him..

His dick wasn't big nor small, it was just average. I could still feel him, he made the sex enjoyable. But I've tasted better and been with better. If he could have a liver he could probably make it to number 3 on the list, right now he was a solid 5..

At least we used condoms, that's the good part of it..

We were having the last round, I was just tired of switching positions and being flexible. My legs were hurting and I needed a break..

I was laying flat on my stomach with a pillow under me to lift my ass up a bit, I tried to do give him more than what the round was meant to be about, by shaking my ass as he pumped which made escalated the session and made him cum.. He literally squeezed my ass very tight as he came, then he slipped out...

He seemed to have enjoyed himself, I turned and slept on my back as he slid out the condom...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My sister was here, I don't even know why she was here knowing very well that she's the cause of this. The sole cause of my losing my baby.. Now she's here acting all godly and being a supportive sister, it dug deep into the pits of my stomach..

My Mother threatened me that if I turn my Sister in, she will also turn me in for attacking her. That she's the one with the most evidence, between my sister and I it's just nothing but my word against hers..

My Mother was even sitting on the mattress with me, acting like the mourning loving Grandmother whilst in actual fact we both know the horror behind us sitting here...

VIRGO

Po was showering, and upon checking my phone. I stumbled upon a lot of messages and missed calls

from Aisha. She had also left a voice mail..

Everything circled around her Apologizing, that was easy I thought we were going to hatch it out first now that she has realized her "Worth".. I decided to call her..

Aisha: I was worried about you

Me: I'm sorry I just needed some time alone

I made sure to hold the call outside, over the balcony..

Aisha: Was it about what happened?

Me: Yes Aisha.. I had time to think that if you want him, you can go for him. I don't wanna be selfish and keep you with me, convince you to be with me when you don't want too

Aisha: I'm not with him, I don't wanna be with him

Me: You two seemed cosy today

Aisha: I'm sorry if that made you feel uncomfortable

Me: It's okay, I just wanna make sure that you
wanna be with me

Aisha: I wanna be with you

Me: I'm glad to hear that, then this situation with
you and Jonathan has to end

Aisha: I know.. I will talk to him

Me: Thank you, I'd appreciate that

Aisha: I love you

Me: I love you more

I hung up with a smile on face..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I decided to stretch my legs by being active around
the house. I was so upset that Virgo hasn't

contacted me. His Mom is paying for the funeral, she has come a few times. He hasn't called, no texted. That was just evil of him, the baby could be his..

Aunty: Kets o.. You not supposed to be doing this I was washing the dishes..

Me: Please just let me do this, just sitting on the mattress all day it's depressing

Aunty: I understand but at least when people come you have to be sitting there

Me: Yes Aunty

Aunty: I'm sorry about what happened, losing a child it's not easy

Me: Thank you Aunty

Aunty: Don't let the pain break you, your Mother still needs you

I nodded whilst biting my tongue..

Aunty: Switch off the light when you come to the bedroom

Me: I'll do so

Aunty: Goodnight

Me: Night

POZISWA

It was late and Virgo decided I sleep over, he was exhausted to drive me back..

When we got to bed he passed out, I wanted to take pictures but it was dark. A flash light might wake him up..

Still can't believe I easily wormed my way into Virgo's life and bed just like that. Aisha is not doing her job well, if it's this easy to get her man?? Like it was very easy..

AISHA

I woke up and prepared myself for school, Virgo hasn't sent me a good morning text. That's unlike him, he always sends me a message and also tells me when he's leaving the flat..

I thought we were over what happened yesterday, why is he still dragging it on?

When I was done I made my way to the bus, I was on the second bus to school..

VIRGO

I decided that Poziswa should get a taxi to school, us showing up together would raise red flags. I gave her R350 for the taxi fare and lunch..

If it was up to me, I wouldn't even go to school. I'd drive straight home for the funeral tomorrow but it would be suspicious just leaving without seeing nor saying anything to Aisha. It was hard getting her for the second time, now that Jo is in a picture. He's looking for cracks to worm his way in..

I don't know how I'm going to face her after what happened last night, how am I going to look her in the eye and act like everything is okay? Couldn't even send her a good morning text. It was that difficult...

I drove out to school with my bag already packed, I wasn't planning on being at school for that long.. My phone beeped, I thought it was Aisha but it was Poziswa telling me she has arrived at school. She left earlier than me

AISHA

I was walking to class when Po caught up with me, she was holding a takeaway package..

Po: Hey

Me: Hi

Po: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine and you?

Po: I'm good

Me: That's not from school

Po: Ohw yes I.. I was at my boyfriend's place last night

Me: I thought your boyfriend was back at home

Po: The one I got from around here

Me: Ohw

Po: Yes.. He got me this breakfast before I left

Me: I see

(Silence)

Po: So I see you and Virgo

Me: Yes we fixed things

Po: Glad to hear that

Me: Thought you would judge

Po: Why should I? It's your love and your heart

Me: That's true

Po: Glad to see you back to being the old you

Me: Ohw ya

Po: Look Aisha.. We cool right?

Me: Yeah.. Sure

Po: Great we should share my breakfast, come on we will get Ase

Me: Thought you were with Futhi

Po: Ohw we just cool, you and Ase are my girls

Me: Glad to hear that

She put her arm over my shoulders..

Po: Agh let's go eat

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 21:59] : SEASON FINALE

41

AISHA

At 13:00 during lunch, I walked Virgo to his car. He was leaving and driving home, said there's a funeral tomorrow..

Me: I'm also going home tomorrow, I won't come to school no interesting classes and no clinicals

Virgo: I'm going to miss you

Me: I'm going to miss you too

Virgo: That's why I've been thinking that Saturday I could stop by in your hood

I looked at him..

Virgo: If you don't mind

Me: Of course not.. I have met your Mother I think it's time you meet my Mother and Sister

Virgo: I'd like that very much

Me: You should get going

Virgo: I think so too

He wrapped his arms around my waist and kissed me..

Virgo: I love you

Me: I love you too

Virgo: I'll call you when I get home

Me: Okay

He got in his car..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Baby funerals are usually not crowded, just family and close friends..

We woke up early that morning to clean, Spring cleaning.. By this time we were already done

Ma: Kokets o

I looked at her

Ma: Make us lunch please

I nodded..

I am still very much angry at her, but now it's not the time to show how broken our relationship is. We won't come back from this..

I heard a knock at the door..

I went to open, it was Bomi. She showed up in a long yellow dress, gold sandals and a yellow doek with shades.. Holding her small yellow bag, she took off her shades..

Bomi: Good afternoon

Me: Afternoon

Bomi: How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Bomi: I'm well Sisi.. I just came to check how things are going

Me: We alright, just preparing for tomorrow

Bomi: Virgo is coming, he's on his way

Me: I'm glad you here, I have to go to the morgue to bath him and dress him up. I would like you to accompany me, you can see him

Bomi: I don't mind that at all, thank you

Me: You can go ahead to the bedroom

She rubbed my shoulder and went to the bedroom..

POZIS WA

My friend Alf and I we were at the cafeteria eating, I told her about my encounter with Virgo she couldn't believe it..

Alf: You lie!

Me: Obviously Aisha is not doing a good job in bed

Alf: It looks that way

Me: It was so damn easy to get him in bed

Alf: But.. This guy is a jerk, you really wanna do that to yourself?

Me: Virgo is a little boy with a bit of some tantrums, I just need the cash from him and he gives me the paper that's as far as our relationship goes

Futhi joined us..

Futhi: Ladies

Me: Hey

Futhi: The Queue is long

Me: It's fast though

Futhi: Let me try

She went to the queue..

Alf: She seems nice

Me: She's okay at least she's the least boring
Person in class

Alf: She does look like she's a good vibe

Me: That she is

AISHA

I met up with Jonathan, actually we bumped into

each other as I was walking to get Ase.

J o: Hey

Me: Hi

J o: You look beautiful today

Me: Thank you

J o: See you around

Me: Uhm.. J o

J o: Yes?

Me: This thing.. I mean, I don't think us being this friendly is a good thing

J o: I am not understanding

Me: I don't think it's wise for us to be this close, especially since you and Virgo are friends

J o: Ohw yes.. I'm sorry, I didn't mean to make you uncomfortable or cause any issues

Me: It's okay.. J ust glad we understand each other

J o: It is well

I continued walking to class...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

After eating lunch, we drove straight to the Morgue..

I had his clothes and a bottle that we bought for him..

Bomi was here, I just wanted her to see the depth of the situation..

His body was tiny, he wasn't looking good at all. I've never seen such a tiny human being.

Bomi: You guys are a very lucky generation, back in our days we wouldn't be doing this

Me: I never got to hold him

Bomi: I'm so sorry about that

Me: Never heard him cry

Bomi: It's not easy, but I'll get better

Tears streamed down..

Bomi: I'm truly sorry

VIRGO

I got home and found our helped Mam'Khosi.

Khosi: I thought you would come with Aisha

Me: She's visiting home tomorrow

Khosi: I really like her, she's a sweet girl

Me: You've never even met her

Khosi: I've heard a lot about her and I found the

kitchen clean

Me: Ohw now I see

Khosi: How are you feeling?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I'm not sure

Khosi: I'm sorry

Me: Wasn't even sure that it was mine

Khosi: I saw that girl, she's a lot of work. Wouldn't be surprised if it's not yours

Me: Either way, I have to go to the funeral tomorrow

Khosi: Ya you have too

Me: Let me go and nap for a while

Khosi: I'll prepare for you, your favorite dish in the meantime

Me: Thank you

AISHA

Our last class was Oral health, can't dodge that one.
The lecturer always shows up..

My phone beeped, it was a text from Virgo:

"J ust got home, wanna nap. Call you later, I love
you"

I replied:

"Okay, I love you too"

Ase: I'm so sleepy and tired

Me: J ust 1 hour that's all

Ase: Where do you think Po got the money to buy us
breakfast?

Me: I seriously don't know but she said that she has

a guy she's fooling with

Ase: I hope she's using protection, she's always sleeping around

Me: I can't imagine myself having random sex

Ase: I'm telling you, she's brave

Me: Way too brave for my liking

Ase: Just glad we not that tight with her anymore

Me: Me too

Po and Futhi walked into class..

Me: Speak of the Devils

Ase: Hai!

KOKETSO (KETSO)

He was due to be brought home at 16:00, Bomi and

I left right after I had bathe him

Me: Thank you for accompanying me

Bomi: It's okay Sweetie.. The funeral is at what time?

Me: 8am we leaving for the cemetery

Bomi: Early funeral is better, we will be there

Me: I appreciate it

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:59] : SEASON FINALE

41

VIRGO

The following morning we woke up and set off to the funeral.. I didn't know how to feel about it all, I

don't like funerals. All the people crying, the suffocation and all that. It's too much..

It was cold this morning, the service wasn't long. It was 20min long and held in the bedroom. Around 10 people were present, her family mostly. On my side it was just My Mother and I.. I thought that Ketso came from a good home, beautiful home. I didn't think she was rich but I did think she was middle class, only to stumble into disappointment. How does a beautiful and always well dress up girl live in a place like this? The standards she holds herself on, I didn't expect her to live here..

The coffin was small and white, I was allowed to see him only Me when I came..

It was difficult seeing anything that resembled me in him, maybe if he was given time in his world we would've seen..

Ketso was crying so much that it was dramatic, she had to be held she was just dramatically acting you could clearly see it. I wanted everything to be done and I wanted to get out of here..

I heard that she had named him Katleho, that's what's going to be put on his Tombstone..

When we were back from the cemetery, we washed our hands at the gate and we were ushered inside to the living room to eat..

We were served Rice, Beef stew, cabbage, mashed potatoes and some carrot mixed with green beans and chutney salad..

Me: I'm okay thank you

My Mother looked at me..

Bomi: Virgo

Aunty: It's okay, losing a child is not easy. Food won't go down well

Me: Thank you for understanding

She walked back to the kitchen with the food

Bomi: That was rude

Me: I like my food prepared a certain way

Bomi: This is not a restaurant, it's a funeral. Your Son's funeral

Me: Alleged Son

Bomi: You are going to hell I tell you

(Silence)

Bomi: You haven't spoken to Ketso

Me: What's there to talk about?

Bomi: I don't know, maybe "I'm sorry for our loss"

Me: What difference will it make? The baby is gone

She shook her head...

AISHA

At 8am I was already on the road home, I wanted to get there early since I won't be spending much time at home..

By 11am, the taxi home dropped me at the corner of my street. I got off and looked around, it was all not that quiet. As I walked home, a few greeted, a few asked about how school is going. Acting like they sincerely asking but in actual fact, they hiding their snake nature behind their Smiles..

I got home and knocked..

Ma: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

I waited for her to come and open, this woman runs a tight security around her house. Door always locked..

She unlocked the door and opened..

Ma: Sontoki!

Me: Ma

She opened the door and I walked in..

Ma: I didn't expect you now

Me: I left early

Ma: What about classes?

Me: We didn't have any, SRC meeting

If I told her I skipped classes, she would murder me..

She hit me on the shoulder..

Ma: You should've called I would've cooked

Me: It's okay we can go to the mall and get something

Ma: It's good to see you

She hugged me..

VIRGO

I excused myself when I got a call from Po. I went outside to pick it up..

Me: Hi

Po: Hey..

Me: Yeah?

Po: What are you doing tomorrow? Thought we should go and have some fun later on, you know?
Get down a bit

Me: Thought you were going to a wedding

Po: I won't sleep I'll be back later

Me: What do you think this is?

Po: Huh?

Me: Go out and have fun? What do you think this is?

Po: I was thinking that it would be nice

Me: Am I your boyfriend?

Po: No

Me: Then don't ask me to go out with you, are we going to have problems with our arrangement?

Po: Uhm no

Me: So don't call me until I do, you understand?

Po: I understand

I hung up..

Kets o: Hi

I turned back and looked at her..

Me: Were you eavesdropping?

Kets o: No I just got here

Me: What you want?

Kets o: Ookay that was a bit rude and unnecessary

Me: That was very necessary because what connected you and I, is no more. I'm going to leave and I don't want you contacting me, we done and

that's that

I walked back in...

AISHA

My Mother and I took a taxi to our local mall, I was going to buy her anything she wanted. I have R1500, I'll use R500 and go back to Res with R1000. It can take me for the remaining weeks if I'm careful about it..

We bought her favorite Nandos, snacks, juice, a cake, Parmalat custard, ice cream. Whatever she wanted I got her, then when we were done we went back home..

It was a full chicken, rolls, chips and a salad.

We will eat now and later, plus I don't eat much..

Ma: So how is school going?

Me: School is going well, I'm really doing well

Ma: I'm glad to hear that

I looked at her..

Ma: Uhm.. Ma..

She looked at me..

I didn't know how to address this..

Me: A while back my boyfriend took me to his home and I met his Mother

Ma: Ohw

Me: Tomorrow he would like to come and see where I come from

She didn't say anything..

Me: If it's disrespectful I understand.. I'll tell him we can cancel

Ma: I've heard that most people get married after graduating I didn't believe it, he took you to meet his Mother that's gotta count for something right?

I nodded..

Ma: So long you promise me that no baby until you graduate, work at least for 3 years or so before considering having a baby

Me: I promise

She smiled..

Ma: Then let's meet this Mr talked about

I smiled too..

Me: Thank you

Ma: What can we say, this new generation is different in my time a man comes to meet your family is to discuss Lobola

Me: Oh well we in a different era

Ma: That's true

I took my phone and texted Virgo..

VIRGO

I read her text message:

"Mom said it's okay, she would like to meet you tomorrow"

I smiled..

Ma: What?

Me: Tomorrow I'm visiting Aisha and her family

Ma: Really?

Me: Yes

Ma: Woooooow can I come too?

Me: To do what?

Ma: You said you were serious about her

Me: I'll talk to her

Ma: Please do

.

To be continued

[03/14, 21:59] : SEASON FINALE

42

AISHA

My Sister came back later on from work, I noticed that things were still off between her and Mom. We chilled in her room so I could ask what's wrong..

Sis: Nothing happened, I just went out and Mom was in her feels

Me: Did you tell her?

Sis: Yes.. I don't understand why she has a problem with me going out but doesn't have a problem with you bringing over a boyfriend tomorrow

Me: It's not like that

Sis: We all know she loves you more, you her favorite I'm a disappointment. I should up and leave

Me: Mom is not like that

Sis: You not here half of the time, you don't know what goes down here

Me: Ohw

Sis: Sorry I won't be meeting your boyfriend tomorrow, I'm going to sleep over at my boyfriend's house just to get fresh air

I hate it when there's quarreling in the house..

VIRGO

I took the dishes to the kitchen, when the door opened.. Some guy walked in..

I looked at him..

Him: Eita

Me: Yeah?

Him: My name is Bonga

Me: How did you get in?

Him: I am Ms Swartboo's Personal Assistant, I deliver things here every now and then and pick them up

Me: Ohw

Him: Is she in?

Me: What you want?

Him: I.. Am here to drop off some files

Me: Couldn't they wait until Monday?

Him: No.. I could've brought them earlier but she

mentioned something about a funeral

Me: Okay

I stretched my hand out for the files, I took them..

Me: Thank you

He nodded and walked out, I shook my head..

My Mother walked into the kitchen..

Ma: Thought I heard voices

Me: Your PA brought these files

Ma: Ohw

She took them..

Ma: Uhm he's just an assistant

Me: I didn't say anything

Ma: Yes you didn't

Me: Let me go to bed, we have traveling to do tomorrow

Ma: Yes of course.. Good night

Me: Good night

AISHA

My Mother's heart was broken by what my Sister did. She always manages to upset my Mother..

Ma: I don't mind her going over to her boyfriend's place but Sontoki she overstays and doesn't pick up her phone I am a Mother what am I supposed to do?

Me: I understand

Ma: Let's go pray and then go to bed

Me: Don't let her get to you, you know how she's like

Ma: Ngizozama (I'll try)

VIRGO

I communicated with Aisha this morning before

driving out to her place, my Mother and I had no idea where we were going. Never heard of her hood, but Google maps was helping here and there.. Bomi was driving..

Bomi: At least it was a 45min-1hour drive
She looked at me..

Bomi: Not affected that she stays in a hood?

Me: There's nothing I can do about it

Bomi: Kasi vibe is nice

Me: Been there?

Bomi: Yes my friends were from the hoods

I nodded..

AISHA

I was nervous about this whole thing. I woke up

early and cleaned the house with the help of my Mother. Virgo comes from a classy neighborhood, his house is beautiful. I'm scared he might look down on me and my home..

To be safe, I prepared lasagne. We have a two plate small oven stove, I did green salad too and I put chicken pieces in the oven..

The meal will go with a cranberry juice..

Ma: They must be very important for my expensive plates to be used

Me: J ust want it to go well

Ma: If he loves you, he will love you through your circumstances. Where you come from and where you grew up shouldn't be an issue for him

Me: That's true

Ma: If he has a problem then maybe he's not the

one. Never be ashamed of where you come from, a real man that loves you will love you just the way you are

Me: I hear you

Ma: What else would you like done?

Me: Well everything seems well for now

Ma: Okay can't wait to see meet these important guests

I was so nervous that I had an anxiety attack.

.

To be continued

Bonus coming later

[03/14, 22:00] : SEASON FINALE

AISHA

They ended up arriving, they were meant to have arrived a while back but they got lost a few times. They showed up in Bomi's flashy car, I noticed she had two guys last time when I visited. A range and a Tiguan..

They arrived in the Range..

Bomi was looking flashy as always, Virgo was a snack too. The hood came alive, neighbours had something to talk about, They just didn't know what was happening..

Bomi made the whole situation better, she was her bubbly friendly self and I was surprised they were eating my food. My Mother and Bomi just kicked it off as if like they've known each other for a long time.

It was beautiful, all the fears and anxiety went away as things I was worried about didn't matter to them..

I kept my eyes on Virgo, he finished the whole slice of the lasagne and salad, not much on the chicken though but at least he ate and he wasn't forcing through..

Bomi: This was delicious

Me: Thank you

Ma: Aisha really dedicated herself in the kitchen today, I have never seen her this dedicated

They laughed..

Me: I do cook every now and then

Bomi: You have a lovely Daughter, I hear she's very smart

Virgo: She is, she is very smart

Ma: She takes after her Father, Lord rest his soul.
Her Paternal family they very smart

Bomi: Then we lucky

Ma: Ohh she doesn't come cheap

Bomi: I figured much

Virgo winked at me..

Me: How was the funeral yesterday?

They looked at each other..

Bomi: It was sad but it went well

Ma: Oh my.. I'm sorry for your loss

Bomi: It's okay

Ma: Who passed on?

Bomi: My niece

Ma: Shame what happened?

Bomi: My cousin gave birth to a still born

Ma: That's sad.. I'm sorry

Bomi: It's okay

Virgo: Thank you for inviting us to your lovely home

Ma: You welcome.. Thank you for coming

Me: I'll take the dishes to the kitchen

Virgo: I'll help you

POZIS WA

This was going to be a boring Saturday, I had hoped that Virgo and I we would chill or something. I have no plans and I couldn't go to the wedding because the Person who was meant to pick me up bailed on me..

I had just finished showering, I applied makeup and

then took nude pictures and sent Virgo just to show him what his missing out on..

AISHA

So you got through meal?

Virgo: It was delicious

Me: Thank you

His phone beeped, he took it out and checked.. He was on it for a while..

Me: Everything okay?

Virgo: Uhm yeah

He put his phone away..

Me: I spoke to Jonathan and explained to him everything

Virgo: And?

Me: He has agreed to not be a nuisance

Virgo: I'm glad to hear that

Me: I'm sorry.. Didn't mean to put you in that position, especially since you've never put me through such. I'd die if you could be that with someone close to me

Virgo: You don't have to worry about that.. Tell me, are you and Po friends?

Me: We okay

Virgo: I don't like her

Me: Why?

Virgo: She's just.. I don't like the Person that she is

Me: Funny you should say that, Ase and I feel the same way too

Virgo: Being friends with her will definitely taint your image, she doesn't have self respect whatsoever

Me: Haibo Virgo.. You don't know her that well

Virgo: From what I've seen I don't like her and I think you should stop hanging with her, I don't want her

influencing you

Me: Don't worry about that, we not close

Virgo: That's good because..

Me: Because?

Virgo: After today, what happened in the living room.. I think I can have a word with my Uncles

I dropped the plate that I was holding...

Me: What?

Ma: Sontoki?

Me: It's okay Ma, the plate just slipped

I looked at Virgo..

Me: I don't understand

Virgo: Let's get married

Me: As in get married?

Virgo: We can pay Lobola for now, then after graduation we can get married

Me: You serious?

Virgo: I love you and what's the point of waiting?

Me: I'm only 22 you 24

Virgo: So?

Me: We still young

Virgo: There's no age to when a Person should get married

Me: This is big

Virgo: You can think about it

Me: Yes I.. I think I should

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My Mother walked up to me, I was hanging the blankets..

Ma: Kets o

Me: Ma

Ma: I think we should put what happened between us and start over

Me: Yeah I'd like that

I don't have a baby that was my ATM, so I'm trapped here for now..

Ma: Look on the bright side, next year you can finally go to school without a baby holding you back

She was saying that as if like my baby was a curse..

Me: I am looking forward to that

Ma: So long, you can apply for bursaries and apply for a school

Me: I'll do that

Ma: That's good

AISHA

Virgo and I were sitting on the stoep, my Mother and Bomi were gathered around the dinner table. My Mother was showing her photo albums..

I was lost deep in my thoughts. Thinking about what Virgo asked me. It all seems quick but I mean every girl has that wish for their better half to take them seriously, take that next step..

I know Bomi will pay the lobola money, and maybe just maybe this is my destiny. A blessing from God..

He squeezed my cheek..

Virgo: Talk to me

I looked at him..

Virgo: What's wrong?

Me: If we do this, I don't want a trail of abuse

Virgo: You won't have that, I promise.. Remember I am going for therapy

Me: Found a Therapist yet?

Virgo: Yes.. Was hoping you could come with on my first session

Me: I'd like that

(Silence)

Me: Okay let's do it

He looked at me..

Me: Let's get married?

He smiled..

Virgo: Are you sure?

Me: I'm sure

He leaned over and kissed me..

POZIS WA

He didn't reply but he did see them..

This was bad, it was very bad. Which guy can turn this down? I thought we had a great time

I laid back on my bed, what hold does Aisha have on this guy??

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:00] : SEASON FINALE

44

AISHA

Late Sunday, Virgo passed by to fetch me..

We bit my Mother Goodbye and drove back to Pretoria.. He asked me to sleep over at his place, I decided to give him a chance since things were better between us now..

We passed by at a restaurant and got some food, then drove to the flat..

Me: Who cleans for you?

Virgo: I do

Me: I don't see you cleaning

Virgo: There's a lot you don't know

Me: I am guessing

Virgo: I'll prepare the food, you just make yourself at home

Me: Okay

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I was preparing dinner when my Sister walked in..

Sis: Hello

Me: Hi

Sis: How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Sis: I'm good

I went to to cooking..

Sis: Ketso.. I'm sorry about what happened

Me: It's okay

Sis: It was an accident

Me: Such things happen

Sis: You'll still have kids in the near future

Me: I know

Sis: I'm actually here to fetch Thami, heard his arriving today

Me: He is

My Brother has since been at some school camp, they coming back today..

Sis: You can come with

Me: I'm busy still cooking

Sis: Okay.. I'll go to see Mom

Me: Cool

AISHA

After eating, I decided to go and take a shower..

Virgo: Can I join you?

Me: Do you have condoms?

Virgo: You were using the pills right?

Me: I stopped when we..

He folded his arms..

Virgo: Wow so you really didn't want us working things out?

Me: I thought we were really done

Virgo: We did try the pull out game remember?

Me: I don't wanna fall pregnant

Virgo: I know and you won't, since we haven't been sexual active I was able to do a little bit of practice with my hand

I laughed..

Me: Well then let's see

POZISWA

I was with Ase we were catching up..

We were comparing Qoutas..

Me: How come you have 20 Patients?

Ase: I worked overtime

I looked at my Qouta, I had 5 patients..

Me: Radiography is draining

Ase: Well you have to get through it

Me: How many Patients does Aisha have?

Ase: 21

Me: How come? I mean dating and books they have never mixed together

Ase: She's dedicated to her school work, we do overtime together at times

Me: And you never told me? Such friends

Ase: You don't hang with us that much no more, you hang with Futhi

Me: Ohw so that's why?

Ase: Agh Po it's not that deep

Me: Yeah whatever, maybe I'll keep on fucking Aisha's boyfriend

Ase: What?

Me: We hooking up

Ase: But you know he's with Aisha

Me: Look he doesn't love her, if he did.. We wouldn't have hooked up

Ase: How do I know that you not lying?

Me: I can describe his flat, plus here

I showed her the nudes I sent Virgo..

Ase: What?

Me: Now you believe me?

Ase: You are evil! Aisha is our friend

Me: Ohw so now we friends? We only friends when it suit you guys right? When Qouta is involved I'm not a friend?

Ase: Get out of my room!!!

Me: With pleasure

AISHA

Sex in the shower would've been great if the tiles weren't slippery. The mat couldn't help us much it was small, so he picked me up and we went to the bed..

His head was buried in between my legs. He sucked my clit whilst his two fingers rubbed against the opening of my coochie..

Me: Ohh Virgo..

I rubbed my hand against his wet hair..

I missed this, the pleasure of it all..

He continued until he noticed that I was about to come, then he came back up and kissed me.. He knelt on the bed with my knees up. He grabbed his

stiff cock and rubbed it against my clit all the way down to my opening..

His other hand he ran it on my thigh, all the way up to my breast. He gently grabbed it and shook it. His hand couldn't cup it all..

Virgo: I've missed you

Me: I've missed you too

He penetrated me and I gasped..

He took it out and tapped it against my clit, then he penetrated me again..

Me: Ahhhh!

He furthered in and I grabbed his arm, he looked at me and I let go..

He started off slow maybe for 10 seconds and then

picked up the pace. He pumped me harder than he's ever done before in our history of having sex..

Me: Virgo!!!!

He ran his hand from my tummy all the way up to my neck and tightened his grip..

First experience in choking, first experience with rough sex but it wasn't bad. Wasn't bad at all.. I lowered my hand and started rubbing my clit..

ASENATHI

I called my Friend from home to talk to her about what happened.. Her name is Zikhona

Zikhona: I think you should stay out of it

Me: Aisha is my friend

Zikhona: Some other people get angry with you for telling them the truth

Me: So I must act like nothing happened?

Zikhona: The affairs of two People you don't meddle, all I know is that the truth always comes out. Let her find out for herself

Me: I can't believe Po would do that

Zikhona: Po doesn't owe this Aisha girl loyalty, her boyfriend does.

Me: But Po knows that Aisha is with Virgo

Zikhona: Either way, Po didn't go to his flat. He was invited in

Me: Boys

Zikhona: Stay out of it

AISHA

The first round, he did pull out and came on my

tummy. The second round he was laid back on the couch, I was ontop of him.

His hands on my butt, my nipple in his mouth and he was helping me with pumping. I would hold on to the support back structure of the couch, he would grabbed on my ass and start fucking me underneath...

The sad part about a relationship turmoil is that you don't get to experience this..

He grabbed on my locks when I started to pump on him harder..

Virgo: Ohhhhhh fuck.. Yes don't stop baby

I went on and he grabbed on my ass and squeezed me down to him releasing a deep moan..

I continued pumping on him until he told me to stop..

Virgo: I think we should take a break

Me: But you didn't come

He kissed me on my cheek..

Virgo: We'll go again, you've really worked me

Me: Okay

I tried to get off..

Virgo: Wait a second.. Just sit for a couple of minutes

Me: Why?

Virgo: I've missed you and I've missed this, I really don't wanna let go

I hugged him..

VIRGO

After a few minutes she got off, I was praying that my cum doesn't run down on her

Aisha: I need to pee

Me: Okay

She took the towel and went to the bathroom..

Po is a very forward girl, I know that when you turn a girl down she usually revenges by telling your girlfriend what happened..

The marriage proposal might take longer, so maybe a baby might be a good way. A baby is a lengthy sentence, Aisha will be stuck to me forever..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:00] : SEASON FINALE

45

I was tiresome from all the sex that we were having. The late last 2 rounds, he did come and I saw his cum.. That was a relief to me, the last thing I want is falling pregnant. That's the Worst of it all, the failure and disappointment of it all..

It was around 1am when we decided to sleep, even so we didn't. There was a lot of talking, I was laying on his chest with my leg across him and he was running his hand on my thigh..

Virgo: I'm telling you

Me: That doesn't sound right

Virgo: I am serious

I yawned..

Virgo: retiring to sleep already?

Me: If I don't sleep now, I won't wake up tomorrow for school

Virgo: I hear you

He kissed me on my forehead..

Virgo: Good morning

I chuckled..

Me: Good morning

ASENATHI

I went to Aisha's room last night and she wasn't around. I tried texting her nothing.

Maybe she decided to stay at home and will come back today..

I got into the bus and made my way to the back..

It was very stressful for me to keep all of this from her, will it affect our friendship should she know that I knew about Virgo and Po?

This was harder than anything I've went through..

AISHA

The following morning he drove me to Res so I could change. He was very clingy this morning. I told him I'll take the 9am bus, meaning I'll miss our first class..

I had already showered at his place so when I got to my room I dressed up..

I noticed that I had missed calls from Ase and text messages. I called her..

Ase: Hey

Me: Hi.. Got your missed calls?

Ase: Are you still at home?

Me: No just got to the Res, I'll catch the 9am class

Ase: Okay, I hope you enjoyed home

Me: I did, thank you. But I was Virgo last night

Ase: Ohw

I know Ase doesn't like Virgo after all that happened, but we back together and I want her to get used to it..

Ase: See you at 9am

Me: Okay no problem

I hung up..

VIRGO

I drove to school, I was a bit late. 30min late for our first class.. On my way to class I called Bomi.

Bomi: Kodwa Ludwe, I tried to call you yesterday

Me: I was with Aisha

Bomi: Still you could've texted

Me: I know I'm sorry

Bomi: It's okay. Glad you arrived safely

Me: Me too

(Silence)

Me: Bomi we need to talk

Bomi: That sounds serious

Me: It is

Bomi: Talk to me

Me: How would you feel about Aisha falling pregnant?

Bomi: What?

Me: Well we have been sexual

Bomi: You didn't use protection?

Me: Well

Bomi: Ludwe!! You can't just keep on making babies

Me: It's Aisha

Bomi: Yes but.. What about school? Couldn't you guys wait?

Me: Aisha will continue with school, a baby is not a failure. She's a smart girl very dedicated we'll give her everything she needs with regards to the baby so she can focus on school

Bomi: You have this all figured out

Me: Her Mother is not working, she can look after the baby.. We can even pay her

Bomi: Are you hearing yourself?

Me: Yes

Bomi: I sent you to school to study

Me: Bomi.. Aisha is.. My friend is poaching her I don't wanna lose her, she makes me happy

Bomi: Aisha seems grounded, I don't see her cheating on you

Me: In this life you'll never know

Bomi: You giving me a headache

Me: Sorry

Bomi: We will talk

Me: Okay

Bomi: I love you bye

Me: Bye

AISHA

I took the 9am bus, it actually arrived at 9:15am..

I made way to class...

We were attending Anatomy, when I walked in everyone was in class. I quickly made my way to sit next to Ase..

Me: Hey (Whispering)

Ase: Hey

I took out my manual as the class continued.

We attended the class and we were out by 10:00am..

Ase: Can't believe next month we starting with mid term tests

Me: There's going to be a lot of studying

Ase: At least we get a week off for studying, we'll only be attending clinicals

Me: Yaa me too

Po came to us..

Po: Girls

Me: Hey

Po: You came in pretty late

Me: Ya I got held up by sleep

Po: Didn't see you this weekend

Me: I was at home

Po: Hope you enjoyed

Me: I did

Po: Let me leave you girls, wanna catch up with
Virgo on something

She walked up to him..

Me: Ohk that's weird.. Since when do they talk

Ase: They classmates

Me: Yaa but I've never seen them talking like one on one

Ase: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yeah let's go

VIRGO

Po's presence bored me. She was walking with me to our next class..

Po: So I was thinking that we can go out this afternoon after class

Me: No

Po: Come on Virgo, you were gone this weekend.. I missed you

She tried grabbing my crotch I moved back..

Me: Are you insane?

Po: Scared of girlfriend?

Me: Listen.. What happened that day shouldn't have happened, honestly speaking I was in a bad space and I needed someone to cheer up my mood

Po: Well your moans said otherwise

Me: My moans said otherwise because it was a sexual act, of course I was going to be aroused

Po: So what are you saying to me?

Me: I'm saying.. We done

Po: I thought we had an arrangement?

Me: The arrangement is done

Po: Wow I wonder what Aisha would say about that night

Me: Are you threatening me?

Po: No I'm just saying

Me: You can go ahead and tell her

She looked at me shocked..

Me: Aisha is not the first girl I've been with, I can't

find another one in a blink of an eye

Po: Ohw

Me: If you wanna tell her you can go ahead, matter of fact. I can even tell her myself

She didn't expect that..

Me: Bye Po

She walked away..

The thing about emotional blackmail is that you can rob the culprit of their power to blackmail you...

AISHA

Ase and I we walked to the Admin, I needed to enquire if the application forms were out already..

Ase: Maybe I'll take some too

Me: You wanna apply too?

Ase: BDS wouldn't be bad

Me: You should apply too

Ase: Maybe I will

(Silence)

Ase: School still comes first right?

Me: Yes of course

Ase: Okay

Me: Is there something wrong?

Ase: No.. Not at all.. J ust making sure that your priorities haven't changed

Me: Okay no they haven't

Ase: Okay

That was very awkward..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:00] : SEASON FINALE

46

AISHA

[2 MONTHS LATER]

We were in the middle of the semester, mid year tests, clinicals, assignments. It was the worst experience, limited time and a lot of work going on..

I've noticed that my body was not adjusting very well to the pressure, I wasn't feeling well. Haven't felt well in a while. I think the pressure was taking a toll on me and it was depressing, though I was working hard but my body was working against me...

I had to cut the day short because I wasn't feeling

well, after our lunchtime I spent the next minutes in the restroom vomiting non stop. Ass had to come and check up on me.

Ase: You haven't been feeling well for a while now

Me: I think it's the contraceptive pills

Ase: First time using them?

Me: No.. I've used them before and stopped never really experienced such heavy side effects from them

Ase: I don't think you will continue with classes

Me: I don't know what's happening, the sickness I can't even describe

She looked at the time..

Ase: It's 14:00 and the bus comes at 16:00

Me: I can't Ase, I'm sick

I wiped my tears..

Me: I think it's the pressure, the stress I just can't

Ase: Well you've always coped well undercover

Me: I don't know.. I am breaking down (crying)

Ase: 16:00 is still far

Me: Let me text Virgo

I texted him that I'm not okay...

We stayed in the restroom for at least 10min before he texted me back, then Ase walked me out. He was standing by the entrance..

Me: I long texted you, why didn't you come out?

Virgo: I only saw it now now

Me: How come? Your phone is always on your hand

Virgo: It was in my pocket this time around

He looked at me..

Virgo: What's wrong? Still feeling sick?

Me: Yes

Virgo: This is getting serious now

Me: I know

Since I started getting sick, I've been staying with him. He wanted me closer so I don't bother my roommate...

Virgo: What you wanna do? Wanna go to the flat?

Me: I think so

Virgo: Okay let's go

He took my bag..

Virgo: Thank you Ase

Ase: Take care of her

Virgo: I will

Ase walked back to class, Virgo and I left..

ASENATHI

I am suspecting that Aisha might be pregnant, she's been showing all the symptoms of pregnancy. I don't know how she can't see it nor think of it..

I went back to class..

I was scared on her behalf, with how difficult school is. There's no room for pregnancy at all..

AISHA

Virgo: How are you feeling now?

Me: I don't know maybe I have inyongo (bile)

He was driving..

Me: Maybe I should clean clean my system

Virgo: That's.. Let's not make our own diagnosis

Me: I have the symptoms

Virgo: I think you should go to the Dr first, what if it's not Bile?

Me: Could it be something serious?

Virgo: Let's be safe than sorry

Me: Well I don't have money to go to the Dr

Virgo: What am I here for?

Me: I've never been this sick before

Virgo: That's why I think we should go to the Dr, tomorrow morning

Me: Okay.. That's better

Virgo: Now we'll pass by at the mall and get you something to eat

I shook my head..

Me: Somehow I feel food is the cause

Virgo: Are you sure?

Me: Maybe yorgut, something light

Virgo: We'll get something light

Me: Thank you

He held my hand...

BOMI

I read his text again:

"I think Aisha is pregnant"

He sent me this text about a week ago.

Aisha has been said to have been sick for a while now.. All I'm praying for is that she doesn't abort, if she feels like she won't be able to handle a baby. I can opt for the baby to come stay here, get a live in Nanny..

If she's pregnant I'm hoping for a baby girl, I've

always wanted a Daughter. Just that after Virgo, I focused more on my career and was never able to fulfill that goal..

AISHA

He bought me everything that I wanted at the mall, rather all the food I wanted..

Virgo showed me a side to him that I wish I had seen when we first started dating. Since I've been sick he's been very supportive, patient with me, and always wanted to be there for me. He never complained, never questioned anything just always there...

Me: I know it's difficult on you too constantly having to miss classes because of me

Virgo: I don't mind at all, just wanna get to the bottom of this.. It's been a while now

Me: I just hope it's not something serious

Virgo: Me too.. Now lay down

I got in bed...

Virgo: I'll prepare something for you, for later on

Me: Okay thank you

Can't wait to go see the Dr tomorrow...

KOKETSO (KETSO)

I managed to get myself a part time job..

I was working at Foschini. I only got it because I didn't wanna stay at home and do nothing, it's depressing. Whilst I'm still trying to apply for next year a job will keep me busy

I am a temp I work at least 4 times a week, Sundays are compulsory for me..

It's a very boring job and my fixed payment is R1600, I get R2000 when I've put in overtime.

VIRGO

I looked at her as she was peacefully sleeping. I've Googled her symptoms and she's definitely pregnant. This has been going on for 2 months now following the last time we were intimate and I came inside of her, even when she asked I was able to convince her that it was her own cum..

Clearly she hasn't been around that much, because I believe women would know when you've come inside of them..

I don't know how she's going to feel tomorrow when the Dr confirms that she's pregnant, I hope she won't be depressed about the whole thing and possibly choose abortion..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:01] : SEASON FINALE

47

AISHA

The following morning we set off to go see the Dr. Virgo sat at the reception as I went to the Dr's consultation room..

Her: When last did you go on your periods?

Me: I.. I haven't thought it was the pills, I'm on Oralcorn

Her: Have you been having unprotected sex?

Me: Yes

Her: When did these symptoms start?

Me: 2 months ago or so

Her: I see.. We have to run a pregnancy test

Me: I'm not pregnant

She looked at me...

Me: I can't be, my boyfriend didn't come inside of me

She chuckled...

Her: Do you know how many sperms get released by a single ejaculation? Even a small ejaculation?

Me: No

Her: We'll do the test

VIRGO

I sat in the emergency room nervous about what might be happening inside..

Bomi called..

Me: We at the Dr's

Bomi: How is it going?

Me: I am at the receptionist she's inside

Bomi: You sure she's pregnant?

Me: Very sure

Bomi: How do you think she's going to take it?

Me: Well it might be difficult but she'll be fine, it's not like she's going to go through all of it by herself

Bomi: I just pray it doesn't cause her too much stress to a point where she will give up on school

Me: I'm not worried about that, she's strong. I don't see her quitting. I'm worried about her wanting to Abort

Bomi: I'm not the best person to judge there, I've had my own mistakes in that department. I'm the last Person to go against it

Me: I don't want her to abort Bomi , this started off as just to trap her and it has progressed to me actually wanting to be a Father

Bomi: Ludwe, Ketso was pregnant and you didn't seem to care even when the baby died

Me: There was a high possibility it was not mine, Ketso was vicious and being tied to her for the longest time was draining. She had no hopes in life, no goals, definitely not a woman I would settle with. Aisha, it's different. I love her and I can build something stable with her. She's reserved, respects herself she'll be a good mother

Bomi: That is true she comes from a very good home and family

Me: So you not angry?

Bomi: What's there to be angry about? So long you won't be giving me a second Grandchild from another girl

Me: I promise

Bomi: We will talk when you guys are done

Me: Okay

Bomi: I love you Bye

Me: I love you too

AISHA

Dr: The test is back

I looked at her..

Dr: You definitely pregnant

The word "Pregnant" echoed through..

Me: I can't be pregnant

Dr: You are

Me: No.. You don't understand, I can't be pregnant.
It's impossible he told me that he..

Dr: Many ladies fell for that trap, never in your life

trust a man when he says that

My head felt lighter, my heart race picked up. I got dizzy...

I got up from the chair and walked out with an anxiety attack creeping in....

I walked to the reception, and Virgo got up from his chair when he saw me..

Virgo: Aisha

I looked at him as tears formed in my eyes.

Virgo: What's wrong? What happened in there?

He walked up to me..

The Dr s showed up..

Dr: I was worried about you, thought you would

pass out at the reception

She held me and helped me to sit down on the floor..

Virgo: What happened in there?

Dr: Are you with her?

Virgo: I'm her boyfriend

Dr: Please get us a glass of water

Virgo walked over to get it..

Dr: Does he know?

I shook my head..

Dr: Do you want him to know?

Me: Yes

Dr: Okay

Virgo got back with the glass of water..

Dr: She's a bit in shock

Virgo: Why?

Dr: She's pregnant

He exhaled..

Dr: She's going to need all the support

Virgo: Yes of course.. Thank you Dr

Dr: She needs to go to the clinic

Virgo: We far from home, can she come here for appointments?

Dr: Yes..

They continued talking and I was not even paying attention to what they were saying. My mind was far away...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I started chatting with this other guy on Insta, in the DM. He's name is Njabulo and he wasn't bad

looking. Not handsome but clean and seems to be financially stable. Not rich, but financially stable..

I was strolling down the mall, I've excused myself saying I'm going to the bathroom. He had asked to give me a call..

Njabs: You have a beautiful voice

Me: Thank you.. Yours is not bad too

Njabs: Thank you

Me: Thank you for the call

Njabs: I was actually calling to see if I can take you out this weekend? On Saturday

Lucky for me, I'm not working on Saturday.

Me: I'd like that

Njabs: I'm at work so I'll ring you later?

Me: Later it is

Njabs: Bye

Me: Bye

He works at SABC, I just don't know what he does there..

AISHA

We were quiet in the car..

Me: How did this happen?

Virgo: I'm not sure

Me: Did you come inside of me? That wasn't my discharge right?

He kept quiet..

Me: You came inside of me!

Virgo: Aisha

Me: How could you?

Virgo: I was really enjoying you and I came inside prematurely

Me: Prem- what do you even mean by that? Why didn't you say so? We could've gotten a morning after pill!

Virgo: I didn't think a premature ejaculation could lead to a pregnancy

(Silence)

Virgo: Look I'm sorry

Me: I'm pregnant and you sorry? How could you? How could you?

I started hitting him..

Me: I hate you!!! I hate you!! I hate you with all my

heart (crying)

He held both my hands tight..

Me: How could you do this to me? (crying)

He pulled me closer to his chest and held me tight..

Me: How could you? (crying)

Virgo: I'm sorry.. I'm really sorry

ASENATHI

Po: Where is the other Mrs goody too shoes?

Me: Really?

Po: I've noticed she hasn't been well

Me: As if like you care?

Po: I was just asking

Me: Well don't, because you don't care. You the same "Friend" who slept with her boyfriend

She rolled her eyes..

Me: Bye Po!

I walked to class..

VIRGO

Aisha cried until she passed out on the passenger's seat. I was excited but also worried, the way she was crying. I don't know if she will go through with the pregnancy.

I need to be extra supportive so she can pass the Abortion stage, be far ahead and not even be able to abort..

We were driving back to the flat and I was lost deep in my thoughts, thinking about when the baby is already here. I want a boy

I seriously want a baby boy..

.

To be continued

We had a few sponsors, sponsored bonus inserts will start tomorrow

[03/14, 22:01] : SEASON FINALE

48

AISHA

I woke up later on at night from a heavy peaceful sleep. When I woke up, I realized the nightmare that

I was in.. Something was smelling nice, Virgo had prepared dinner and circled it around the small coffee table..

Virgo: Hey

Me: Hi

Virgo: Prepared dinner for you

I looked at the food..

Virgo: I prepared Mac&Cheese, steak, green salad. There's Mango juice, Oreo cake and ice cream in the fridge with chocolate sauce

That sounded yummy..

I sat up straight on the bed.. He came and knelt before me, he held my hand..

Virgo: I'm so sorry for what happened, I'll take full responsibility. I want you to know that you won't go through this alone, I'll always be here. If you keep

the baby, you won't even have to spend a cent all up until the baby is born. Even after the baby is born, you won't spend a cent, you'll still continue with studies and you'll get all the help you need

Me: What do you mean "If I keep the baby" I am a Christian I don't believe in abortion

Virgo: So you keeping the baby

Me: My Mother is going to be disappointed, this was not the plan

Virgo: She will be angry but as time goes on she will be okay

Me: We young Virgo, I'm 22 you what? 24? How can we be Parents at this age?

Virgo: We will make it work.. I promise just allow me to be there for you

I thought for a while..

Virgo: Let's not overthink it, let's just go with the flow okay? See how it goes?

Me: Okay

He put his hand on my cheek..

Virgo: We going to make it

Me: Okay

Virgo: Can we try and eat?

Me: I'd like that

I went and took a shower.. I had time to think in the shower, if we can make this work? Will I be able to be a Mother? I've disappointed myself, my Mother. All my enemies are going to be happy, this is a nightmare..

When I was done showering, we sat down and ate..

Virgo's phone rang..

Virgo: It's my Mother

He answered..

Virgo: Miss pretty thang

Bomi: Hey you

Virgo: You good?

Bomi: Yes and you?

Virgo: I'm good too.. I'm having dinner with Miss
Pretty thang jnr

Bomi: Ohw hey Aisha

Me: Hello

Virgo: We have something to tell you

Bomi: Okay?

Virgo: Aisha is pregnant, we were at the Dr today
She kept quiet..

Virgo: Ma?

I heard her sniffing..

Me: Are you okay?

Bomi: Are you sure? I mean.. Are you guys sure?

Me: Yes

Bomi: Wow.. So I'm going to be a Grandmother?

Virgo: You not mad?

Bomi: Why would I be? At least you guys are not in high school

I didn't expect that reaction..

Virgo: Aisha is worried about her Mother

Bomi: I understand.. Aisha I don't want you to worry much about that, school is hectic enough just concentrate on school and your health. I don't want you to worry about anything, Dr's appointments and what not

Me: Thank you

Bomi: Virgo I really need you to act right

Virgo: I promise

Bomi: I don't want you worrying about your Mother either, it'll be sorted I promise

Me: Okay

Virgo: We'll call you again tomorrow morning

Bomi: Okay.. I love you guys

Virgo: We love you too

He hung up..

Virgo: At least one Person is happy for us

Okay this might actually work, I just need my Mother's support and I'll be okay..

KOKETSO (KETSO)

I kept on going back to his post, he had posted on his Instagram. A picture of her sleeping with the caption:

"Mommy to be "

People were congratulating him, around 1k comments and 10k likes/reactions.

My heart instantly broke, by how he was replying to the comments it showed he was happy..

Tears streamed down, I lost our baby and he didn't even care...

AISHA

After our dinner, Virgo went to shower. I was on the call with Ase..

Ase: That's.. Wow

Me: I know right

Ase: So what are you going to do?

Me: I'm keeping the baby

Ase: I support you in every decision that you take

Me: I'm scared, I mean.. A whole entire Mother?

She chuckled..

Ase: It's not the end of the world, just keep on pushing with school

Me: That's not even up for discussion, I've disappointed my Mother enough

Ase: You haven't told me about her?

Me: I don't know how, I'm probably going to tell my Sister first

Ase: She might not even be angry, Parents will surprise you

Me: I know she'll be very disappointed

Ase: That's true

Me: Let me sleep

Ase: How are you holding up?

Me: Now that I know I'm pregnant the sickness is

gone

Ase: Fear can do that

Me: Yaa

Ase: We will see each other at school tomorrow, you coming right?

Me: Won't miss school anymore, especially not after this.. I have to be serious now

Ase: Okay then.. See you at school

Me: Okay bye

Ase: Bye

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I didn't know how to react, my heart was very broken.. This goes to show that if a guy loves you, he will be committed..

This Aisha girl is very basic, not even wow. I don't

know what Virgo saw..

I'm more beautiful than her, it's crazy!!

Even Bomi had uploaded something about this, she wasn't this happy about my being pregnant. Bunch of traitors...

AISHA

Virgo: Are you sure about this? Especially after the hard day we had?

Me: Can't control my hormones being insane, plus you were looking like a snack after getting out of the shower..

He inserted it in..

Virgo: Won't coming inside of you harm the baby?

Me: Google said no

Virgo: You got it all figured out huh?

Me: Maybe

He leaned over and kissed me whilst still inside of me pumping in and out slowly.

Virgo: I love you so much baby

Me: I love you too

ASENATHI

I pumped into Po at the kitchen with Futhi, I was going there to wash my dishes..

Po: Ohw Ase

Me: What

Po: Is Aisha pregnant?

I looked at her..

Po: Virgo posted it

Me: So you need validation from me?

Po: I just don't know how she will feel about the fact that Virgo and I hooked up a while back

Me: That's not my business

Futhi: First year and we already pregnant, what are here to make babies or study?

Po: How much a fool can you be?

Futhi: Same class, varsity relationship, first year

Po: It will end in tears

Futhi: He will be strolling with another down the line

Po: We'll there with tissues

They laughed. I put on my earphones and listened to music loud..

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 22:01] : SEASON FINALE

49

AISHA

Following the day of us finding out that I'm pregnant, it got a bit tougher for me. The first trimester plus school was just unbearable for me.. The workload, the pregnancy and keeping it from my Mother was just too much..

I need to tell her that I'm pregnant before my tummy shows so home can be a safe place to go too knowing me and her are in good terms..

I was now 3 months pregnant, couldn't wait to get on my second trimester. The Dr said the first and the 3rd trimesters are the hectic ones...

Virgo and Bomi were very supportive, honestly speaking I didn't think Virgo would be this supportive, but he was.. So supportive and over protective that it was actually driving me insane..

He didn't like me eating at the cafeteria, he would drive out when we at school to get me lunch or rather come with a meal..

On weekends I was with him, during weekdays at times we would chill at the Res in my room....

Ase: You should get pregnant more often if we going to be eating like this

I chuckled..

Me: Stop with the drama

I mostly share my food with her..

I heard a knock at my door..

Me: I wonder who that is

It was late at night, at Res..

I went to open, it was Po..

Me: Hi

Po: Hey

Me: Hi

Po: The notes

Me: Ohw yes

I went to get them, she came in..

Po: Wow a large triple decker

I got the notes..

Po: And I wasn't invited?

Me: Well since you hanging out with Futhi, I assumed we weren't friends anymore

Po: So I shouldn't hang around with other People?

Ase: Ohw please Po!

Me: Here are the notes

She took them..

Po: You really are feeling yourself aren't you?

Me: I'm sorry?

Po: Since you fell pregnant nje and still dating Virgo

Me: I don't know how that makes me feel myself, it's not like I'm bragging about it

Po: So weird how light skin guys their dicks ain't completely light

Me: I'm sorry?

Po: Ohw I know his dick

Ase: I think you should leave Po

Po: Yeah I should

Me: Wait.. Wait.. What did you mean by that?

Po: I mean that his couch is blue, red smeg toaster and kettle.. Grey duvet and pillows with pure white sheets, a flat screen, a PS5

Me: How would you know that

She got her phone, was on it for a while.

Po: Here

She showed me the nudes she had sent to him, it was Virgo's number. Though he never replied but it was his number why would she have his number?

Po: Oops that wasn't even long ago

Ase: Okay that's enough.. Leave!

Po: Eyy amadoda will Hurd you (men will hurt you)

Ase walked over and pushed her out..

Ase: Go out now!!

Ase closed the door, she then looked at me..

Ase: Aisha

Me: He cheated on me with Po?

Ase: I'm sorry

Me: He.. He cheated on me

She came over and held me..

Ase: Okay let's go and sit down

POZISWA

I felt good about what I did, quite frankly I did her a favour. She has to understand the type of man that she's with...

It was about time!!

VIRGO

I was disturbed by Aisha's text as I was busy playing a game. I paused and read through:

"Out of everyone you had to cheat on me with Po?"

My heart almost stopped.. I called her

She didn't answer at first, I called again over and over until she picked up..

Me: Baby what's up with the text

Aisha: Please don't deny it, don't make me a bigger fool and deny it

Me: Okay Aisha listen.. It was nothing

Aisha: So it's true?

Me: Baby please.. It's not what you think it is

Aisha: Don't ever talk to me, ever again! We done you hear me? We done for good!!

She hung up..

Me: Ais-

I looked at my phone..

I called Po..

Po: Wow thought you would never call

Me: What did you tell Aisha?

Po: Nothing but the truth

Me: I'm going to ask this and you'll think I'm playing, do you know who you mess ing with?

Po: Uhm.. Please do tell me

Me: I hope you understand what you have gotten yourself into

Po: I am so scared (Sarcasm)

AISHA

Ase: Ohh Aisha

She was laying on the bed behind me..

Me: I'll never catch a break

Ase: You just fell in love with a jerk that's all

Me: I'm carrying his baby. I'm tied to him!, I even feel like he got me pregnant on purpose to trap me

Ase: Po is an evil Person

Me: Virgo didn't rape Po, Virgo knew was he was doing too. He had a choice to not do it but he did it anyway

I wiped my tears..

Ase: I'm sorry

Me: What am I going to do? It hurts so much (crying)

Ase: I know it does, I know it does

VIRGO

She had switched her phone off, and it was making

me go crazy..

Bomi: Okay Virgo calm down

Me: I'm not going to calm down Bomi!

Bomi: I don't understand, why did you do it?

Me: This is not the time to be pointing fingers Bomi

Bomi: You cheated, what do you want me to do?
You did this to yourself

She wasn't making it easier.. I hung up..

I would drive there but I won't have access to go to her room, she'll have to come down and sign me in..

I was completely losing my mind..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:01] : SEASON FINALE

51

AISHA

I looked at him..

Me: After everything that you have put me through, you seriously going to stand here and threaten me?

Virgo: I'm not threatening you, I'm being honest with you

I yanked my arm his grip..

Me: Stay away from me

Virgo: I can't do that

Me: Haven't you hurt me enough? Haven't you caused me pain enough? Haven't you humiliated me enough? Out of everyone.. Po? Sies Virgo! Everyone knows how loose she is! You couldn't at least find someone worth it? You disgusting! You disgust me! Did you even use protection? You could've gotten me sick

Virgo: Hey!.. That's enough!! (shouting)

I kept quiet..

Virgo: If you weren't playing best friends with my friend then Po and I wouldn't have..

Me: Ohw so it's my fault? I'm so sorry that I somehow made you cheat!

Virgo: Calm down because you cause complications with my baby

Me: As if like you care? If you did you wouldn't be putting me through this pain!

Virgo: It was before you fell pregnant

Me: That makes it better?

Virgo: Dammit Aisha! So I slept with Po, so I hid it from you that my ex was pregnant.. None of these women matter anymore, I'm not with them! I'm with you!! I love you!

Me: Then your idea of love hurts, and I don't want to experience it

He kept quiet..

Me: Goodbye Virgo

I walked away...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Njabulo took me out for breakfast this morning. It was my day off..

Me: Honestly speaking, I wouldn't say I have fallen in love with him. I just like the idea of him being well off stable and taking care of me and my needs, other than that. I really ain't feeling him..

Njabs: This restaurant is expensive

Me: It's not like we going to eat here everyday

Njabs: That's true but..

Me: This is nice.. Thank you

Njabs: You welcome

He's a very nice and loving guy, too loving for my liking..

Me: Ohw I am planning on doing my hair this weekend

Njabs: How much?

Me: R500

Njabs: R500 just to do hair?

Me: Hair is expensive these days

Njabs: Shuuuuuu R500

Me: If it's going to be a problem I can always try and budget

Njabs: No it's okay.. I'll give you

Me: Are you sure? I don't want to put you under pressure

Njabs: No it's okay

I faked a smile....

AISHA

Ase: Calm down, don't let him get to you

Me: Who the hell does he think is?

Ase: He's Virgo and in his own twisted mind he's always right

Me: After all the pain he's put me through

Ase: Aisha don't let him get to you, that's what he wants. To get to you, if you allow him he will win

Me: I hate him, I wish I never date him

Ase: What happened, happened. Now that's left is to just move on from the situation by next year all of this will be boring news

Me: I pray so

VIRGO

I was in the car driving to Aisha's place..

I was on a call with Bomi..

Bomi: What?

Me: I'm going to her place to tell her Mother that's she's pregnant

Bomi: Ludwe! Do you think that's a good idea

Me: It's not about it being a good idea or not, it's about doing what's best. Aisha is angry, she's hurting and she hates me. She would definitely want to be rid of the baby, if her Mother knows then it'll be hard for her to abort

Bomi: I don't think she will abort

Me: That's rich coming from you, you've been through this you know better.. You wanted to abort me after the one night stand

Bomi: That's different

Me: How?

Bomi: Virgo you can't just go to her house and announce she's pregnant, what are you trying to do? Ruin the girl's life?

Me: I'm just hoping her Mother would be angry to the point of kicking her out then we will win

Bomi: You are causing me problems at school than you did when you here at home now I'm asking myself if I did good by sending you to school

Me: Whatever Bomi.. Bye

POZISWA

Futhi: Po

I looked at her..

Po: You haven't touched your food

Me: I'm not hungry

How can one enjoy a meal after all the words that Virgo said to me? The toilet comment. I know that at times yes I don't have a good smell arising from there but I always make sure it doesn't get in my way of being sexual. I bath using the pure soap and put in canex v cream...

Futhi: Snap out of it already, so he said all that shit to you then what? Thinking about it won't change the situation. He still would've said those words

Me: I am just not hungry okay? That's all

Futhi: Ehh okay

AISHA

Seeing Po at the cafeteria was hard, Ase and I left..

Me: I hate this life, I hate how I'm living now

(Silence)

Me: Not so long ago I was nothing to nobody and now here I am

Ase: Aisha it's life, you've made the mistake you can't live there forever

Me: I know

Ase: Just continue with school, continue striving.. That's all that you can do

Me: Very true

KOKETS O (KETS O)

After breakfast he brought me a few snacks..

Me: I enjoyed this

Njabs: I did too

He held my hand. We've only slept 3 times since we started dating.. Not because the sex is bad but because of our hectic schedules

Me: We should take a weekend away.

Njabs: I don't think that's going to be possible

Me: J ust go spend it at a lodge or something it's not so expensive

Njabs: I'll think about it

Me: Okay Babe

VIRGO

My Mother called, I picked up..

Me: Bomi

Bomi: Ludwe think about this, Aisha might hate you even more

Me: Only her family can help in this situation

Bomi: You might think like that but it might create more problems for her

Me: It's the risk I'm trying to take, she's threatening to leave me.. She's breaking up with me and I can't have that

Bomi: This is not about you, why you making it about you?

Me: It is about me! I'm not letting go for the second time

Bomi: Hai Ludwe!!

Me: Speak to you later

AISHA

We walked back to our last class, I noticed Virgo wasn't around. I didn't care, but I did care at the same time..

Po and Futhi walked in..

I glanced down at my Manual..

Futhi: For some reason I'm getting sleepy, heard that if there's someone who is pregnant in the room you will feel sleepy

Me: That's childish

Ase: What did you expect from those two?

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

52

VIRGO

It took all in me deep within me to tell her Mother about the pregnancy. The reaction was confusing..

Her: Why is Aisha not the one here telling me?

Me: Because she's scared and you not knowing depresses her everyday. Your reaction towards the situation, she's scared that you would be disappointed

Her: How far along is she?

Me: 3 months

Her: Ohh Nkosi yami

Me: I'm terribly sorry about this and please know that I won't leave her, I will be supportive throughout

Her: Aisha promised that this would never happen

Me: I'm truly sorry

Her: Please leave

Me: Yes, I'm truly sorry too

I stood up and left..

AISHA

We were back at Res, this day was the worst. Futhi was acting like a kid, I don't understand a grown up acting like a kid!!!

My phone rang, it was my Mother. I took a deep breath and answered..

Me: Ma

Ma: Aisha

Me: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

She kept quiet..

Me: Ma?

Ma: Aisha is it true?

Me: What's true?

Ma: Are you pregnant?

My heart almost stopped..

Ma: Is it true?

Me: How did you??

Ma: Virgo was here

Me: What?

Ma: Are you pregnant?

Me: No I'm not

Ma: Aisha!!!

Me: I am not

Ma: Then why would he come here and say such?
Drive all the way to say such?

Me: We broke up, this is his way of getting back to me

Ma: Aisha..

Me: I'm sorry Ma for putting you through this

Ma: You were meant to go to school Aisha not everything I'm hearing now

Me: I'm sorry for putting you through this Ma

Ma: Do you promise?

Me: I promise

Ma: I'm glad to hear that then, what's wrong with this boy? Who does something like this

Me: I know.. He's insane, he's crazy and obsessive

Ma: Stay away from that boy

Me: I promise

Ma: Okay then we will talk

Me: Okay Ma

I hung up..

What the hell? Who does that?? Virgo is crazy!!!

POZISWA

Today was the worst day of my life, found out that I failed my mid year biology exam. It's a 6 months module, you fail it. You come back and repeat next year..

I needed 50% and I got 45%.

I am even using NSFAS, heard it doesn't come

through when you have failed..

I laid back on my bed, this was a disappointment..

AISHA

I called Virgo..

Virgo: Still mad at me?

Me: What is wrong with you?

Virgo: Mom called you already?

Me: What gave you the right to go to my Mother and pull this shit?

Virgo: It's not like you were going to keep a whole entire baby from her

Me: I was going to tell her at my own time!

Virgo: Yeah what time was that going to be? At least it's out now

Me: You a Psychopath

Virgo: That's a big term to use on someone

Me: Stay away from me!

Virgo: I would love too, but you have my baby inside of you!!

I hung up. Now I really need to do that abortion, I really need to take out this baby.

I sat on the chair and Googled things I can use that can make me miscarry....

BOMI

I knocked in his office..

Him: Come in

The door was wide open..

I stood there he looked at me..

Me: Hello Sizwe

Sizwe: Nobomi

Me: It's been a while

Sizwe: That's very true

(Silence)

Sizwe: You still look very beautiful

Me: Thank you

Sizwe: What brings you here?

Me: That... I never aborted

Sizwe: Ohw

Me: He's 24

He slowly nodded..

Me: And he needs to know his father

Sizwe: You've aborted at least 2 of my kids, what was difficult about this one?

Me: We don't want your money okay? We don't need anything from you

Sizwe: Then why are you here?

Me: He needs to know who his father is

Sizwe: He's 24 isn't he?

Me: Yes

Sizwe: So he's survived without me

Me: Sizwe.. You owe him that much

Sizwe: I don't owe him nothing, I also don't owe you anything! He's 24, he's survived without me! He's a grown ass man

Me: You are a ruthless man!

Sizwe: Goodnight Bomi, please close the door on your way out

AISHA

I found a private group on Facebook that deals with abortion. The Person is selling pills, says they are R800. He had a fake account, said it was to protect his "Identity" because this is illegal..

I gave him my number, and he called me..

Me: How do I know that you not scamming me?

Him: Do you want the pills?

Me: I need to be sure

Him: You send R400 into my account and then R400 upon meeting

Me: You stay around here? In Pretoria?

Him: J ohannesburg but I can make the trip if you serious

Me: Tomorrow afternoon?

Him: 14:00?

Me: Okay

Him: Okay bye

I had 2k in my account, Virgo sent it to me a while back. I hope this is legit, R800 is a lot to waste...

VIRGO

Apart from the day being screwed, it got more screwed. In our whatsapp group they had sent the list of our biology results. I got 35%, so I've failed.. I know the last 4 digits of Aisha's student number. She passed, she got 68%.

This is bad, I only have the pregnancy to hold her to me. She's going to second year and I'm not, I'm going to lose her because we won't be seeing each

other as much anymore. The pregnancy is the only thing that will help me..

AISHA

I was on my knees praying. Asking for forgiveness beforehand. Heard abortion is wrong, it's murder and you could go to hell.

After praying, I checked the group. I had passed biology, Virgo failed.. This is redemption, now that he's failed and when there's no baby. I can finally move on from him for good... I just need to tolerate him for this next 4 months then final exams..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

AISHA

The next day I went to school, got through the day. It was peaceful because Virgo was not around, for some reason he didn't come today..

I left during lunchtime to go meet up with the guy, I had sent him R400 last night and I had the R400.

I opted that we should meet in a public place for my safety, we met at Nandos..

Me: Thank you for coming

Him: Business is business

Me: Do you have them?

Him: Do you have my money?

I handed it to him. He handed me 4 pills..

Him: You drink 2, then put 2 underneath. You will be in pain, a lot of pain so I suggest you drink these painkillers mybulline.

He gave me 4 of them..

Him: Only when you feel pain, and don't mix up the pills

Me: Thank you

Him: Pills are safe, they won't damage your womb they'll just take everything out of you

Me: Thank you, Thank you so much

I put the pills in my bag..

Him: If we done I would like to eat and then we can leave

Me: Okay.. Let's eat

Him: So how did you get to this point?

Me: Long story

Him: Tell me about it

VIRGO

I looked at them talking and eating, I was tailing Aisha. I actually came here to the Res to talk to her, I waited for her and when she got off the bus she went to Nandos..

I thought she was going to eat lunch but she was meeting up with someone. So that means she's been seeing someone all this while..

POZISWA

I didn't even know if I should continue with school or just leave and come back next year to repeat. What's the use of attending other modules when I know that I have already failed..

I knocked at our lecturer's office..

Him: Come in

I walked in..

Me: Sir May I talk to you?

Him: Yes please

I walked in and sat down..

Him: What can I do for you?

Me: I am in the BDT Program

Him: Okay

Me: I failed my exam

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: I don't know how

Him: If you had written it manually I would give your script but it was computerized and the computer marked it

Me: I can't fail Sir

Him: You should have studied

Me: I did

Him: Then you didn't study hard enough

Me: Isn't there something I could do?

Him: Like what?

Me: You know

Him: The results have already been submitted to the course coordinator, there's nothing I can do.. If you don't mind, I have a lot to do please close the door on your way out

AISHA

After eating he left straight away, I was to leave too but I was surprised to see Virgo walking in..

Virgo: Hey

Me: Hi

Virgo: Small world

He sat down..

Me: What are you doing here?

Virgo: I was in the neighborhood and I saw you here

with your boyfriend

Me: You stalking me?

Virgo: I was in the neighborhood

Me: Can you please leave me alone?

Virgo: You know that can't happen, we having a baby together

Me: The torture

Virgo: Better get used to me

(Silence)

Virgo: Are you sleeping with him?

Me: He's not my boyfriend Virgo

Virgo: A friend?

Me: No

Virgo: Then?

Me: It's none of your business

He hit the table..

Virgo: It is my business!! You carrying my baby so it is my business!!

I looked around..

Me: You embarrassing me

Virgo: Then maybe we should get out of here

Me: I am not going anywhere with you, if I leave here I'm going to the Res

Virgo: No you are coming with me to the flat

I looked at him, this might work well for me. I can take the pills and when it happens, I'll blame the stress on him..

Me: Okay.. I just have to pack a bag

He looked at me...

Virgo: J ust like that?

Me: I don't want you busy bothering me

Virgo: Let's go then

Me: Let's go

POZISWA

I called my Mother and told her now, so she can get mad now..

Ma: Poziswa!

Me: School is difficult Ma, varsity is difficult

Ma: Is it? Or you just distracted by your whore tendencies

Me: I'm really trying

Ma: I knew this was going to happen, I saw it coming

Me: I didn't do it on Purpose Ma

Ma: Hai just forget about lento yeskolo and come back home, you will look for a job in retail and save us money. The money for groceries I send you every month, I could do something better with it. J ust come back home, pack and come back Po

That was discouraging, my own Mother not believing in me...

AISHA

I went up to my room and packed up a bag.

I looked at the pills, Virgo walked in, I put them in the bag. He came up with me to make sure I come down..

Virgo: Ready?

Me: Yes

I zipped the bag..

Virgo: I'll carry it for you

He came and took it, I looked at him.. He has no idea what awaits him tonight..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

54

AISHA

I thought Virgo would harass me or something when we got to the flat, he didn't. He liked the idea of me being here, and ignored me by playing his games all throughout. I was chilled watching a series until late, when he ordered something to eat for us.. We ate and then I went to bath..

I got into the bathroom with my toilet bag, inside were the pills. I started off by bathing first, when I

was done I sat on the toilet seat and thought for a while. I have already assured my Mother that I am not pregnant, can't go back on my word now.

There's no coming back from this. I have my whole life ahead of me, a lot to achieve and I definitely don't want Virgo as my baby daddy..

He says he's going to be supportive but we talking about Virgo here, he can make the whole process impossible for me..

I don't know which girl can't feel when a guy comes inside, I'm smart but clearly not that smart. This is my own mistake, and I have to fix it..

I drank the two pills, then inserted the other ones deep inside. I was scared of the outcome, so much I got an anxiety attack.

I just want this to work so I can forget about this

nightmare....

POZIS WA

I received a call from my Mother..

Ma: Pozis wa

Me: Ma

Ma: Pack up, tomorrow morning your Uncle and I we coming to fetch you

Me: Why?

Ma: What do you mean why? You've already failed what's left for you there?

Me: I need finish off my other modules so I can repeat only this one next year

Ma: You will come back next year, right now there's no hope

Me: Ma

Ma: I don't wanna hear more, you wanna remain there just because you still want to entertain boys

Me: That's not true

Ma: We coming to fetch you tomorrow, please pack

AISHA

I laid down on the bed, he came and laid next to me..

Virgo: Aisha I know I messed up, I'm sorry

Me: You didn't just mess up, you broke us. Broke what we had

Virgo: We can't count Ketso, she's my ex

Me: You should've told me about her and the pregnancy, you should've told me about you two meeting up

Virgo: I thought it wasn't important

Me: Po?

Virgo: That was a mistake, I even used protection to show that it meant nothing. It was when we were having problems

Me: You said you will let me go, no repercussions

Virgo: All I'm asking is please let's be civil towards each other then for the sake of the baby. The baby is the best thing that has come out of this relationship

I kept quiet..

Virgo: I'm sorry for all the pain I've caused you, I understand your anger and frustration. Maybe one day things will be better and I'll prove to you that I love you

Me: I am tired.. I wanna sleep

Virgo: I love you

I turned to the other side..

Virgo: Okay I'll go and shower, I'll give you some space

He got off bed..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My little brother helped her with her luggage..

Seipati: Thank you Thami

Ma: It's that bad? So much that you had to leave him?

Seipati: I thought I could take his cheating Ma, but it's getting worse

Ma: Seipati you've been married for years

Seipati: He's not even choosing me Ma, he is choosing her

I chuckled..

Seipati: You enjoying this right?

Me: Quite frankly this is nothing compared to you killing my baby!

Seipati: You attacked my Mother!

Ma: Shut up! Both of you, you not helping

We all kept quiet..

Ma: Seipati you will sleep in Thami's room, Thami you will sleep on the couch

Thami: The couch?

Ma: Yes.. Now help your Sister take her bags to your bedroom

AISHA

I was woken up later on at night by cramps.

More like intense period pains. I got up and Virgo was sound asleep..

I went to my bag took out a pad and the pain killers then went to the bathroom. Yes I have started

bleeding. I put on the pad then went to drink the pain killers, two of them..

I took a deep breath, I was feeling hot..

I then went back to bed, hoping that the cramps will go..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I woke up to go get me a glass of water, My sister was sitting at the table drinking wine.

I got the glass and went to get me water, she was crying..

Me: That's my wine

Sis: Ohw I'm sorry.. I'll pay it

Me: Please do

I walked to my bedroom..

Seipati: You hate me that much?

I looked at her..

Seipati: You hate me that much that you would rejoice at the downfall of my marriage?

Me: You killed my baby, there's no coming back from that

I continued walking to my bedroom..

VIRGO

I woke up the following morning very early, Aisha was sleeping..

I pulled down the bedcovers and saw blood on the sheet..

Me: Aisha

I shook her..

Me: Aisha!!

She opened her eyes..

Me: You bleeding

She glanced down..

Aisha: What?

Me: You couldn't feel it?

Aisha: I had cramps last night but they got a bit better

Me: And you never woke me up? Are they still there?

Aisha: J ust a little

Me: Wake up I'm taking you to the Dr

Aisha: Ohh God

Me: Come get dressed, I'm taking you to the Dr

POZISWA

I was woken up again this morning by my Mother's call..

Me: Ma

Ma: We leaving home

I checked the time, it was 7am

Ma: I hope you have packed up, we will see you soon

She hung up..

AISHA

I know the cramps were hectic last night, they went on for hours and I had to drink the last two that's how I was able to pass out..

Now they were back again, and they were intense. I was about to shower but I found myself sitting at the toilet with blood coming out. I kept on pushing out for some reason until something came out and fell inside.

The pains were excruciating and I couldn't stop crying..

Virgo: Aisha

Me: Ohh my God (crying)

Virgo: Should I call the ambulance?

He tried to open but the door was locked.

I've never felt anything like this, not even period pains are this painful..

I slowly got up and looked through, the toilet was bloody. Blood clots, my heart sank as I flushed..

I sat on the toilet seat too..

Virgo: I'm calling the ambulance!

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

55

AISHA

Hospitals this side are mad expensive, but what can one expect because we live in town and the Ambulance took us to the nearest hospital..

Dr: Your toxicology report came back

Me: Okay

Dr: You didn't miscarry, you were aborting right?

I nodded shamefully..

Dr: It's illegal for anyone to have these pills especially if it's not a medical personnel and the pills are highly dangerous. If you wanted to abort why didn't you come here or see a Dr?

Me: Am I getting arrested?

Dr: No

Virgo knocked and walked in..

He greeted the Dr and then looked at me..

Virgo: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay but the baby didn't make it

Virgo: What?

Dr: I'll give you two some privacy

Virgo: What caused the Miscarriage Doc? She was doing okay, the Dr said she's doing okay when we went for a check up

Dr: It could be a number of factors, the first trimester is very critical. That's why we urge pregnant women, who are in their first trimester to take care of themselves

Virgo: I just don't get it

Dr: I'm sorry losing a child is not easy

The Dr walked out...

BOMI

I took a day off today because I wasn't feeling well. I was very tired, I didn't get a good night sleep last night. I dreamt of myself when I was aborting..

Khosi: You didn't go to work?

Me: No

Khosi: Are you sick?

Me: No I just didn't get a good night sleep

Khosi: What happened?

Me: Just an unsettling dream

Khosi: What was it about?

Me: It's nothing really

Khosi: Okay.. I'll just start with work

I tried calling Virgo this morning but he didn't pick up...

VIRGO

I walked out of the hospital to my car and I couldn't hold myself but tear up...

I really wanted this baby, I was looking forward to being a father. Could it be that my own actions led

to Aisha losing the baby?

I blame myself, I can't seem to get anything right. I ruin everything, I'm a screw up..

AISHA

I did this, I made the decision to do away with the pregnancy. I thought that I would be relieved but guilt was eating me up...

It hasn't been a Year at school and I've done so many things, things that could've potentially stood in the way of me attaining my degree..

My heart was sore, this was not the plan..

ASENATHI

I was surprised to see Po with her bags downstairs as I was going out to buy something from the shop next door..

Me: Po

She looked at me..

Me: Are you visiting home? Isn't it a critical time to visit home?

Po: I'm actually moving back home

Me: What?

Po: I've failed biology

Me: Shouldn't you be writing everything that's left to

make it easier for you next year?

Po: It's fine Wethu, I'll come back next year prepared

Me: Po

Po: Ase please don't put more frustration on me, you passed you don't know what I'm going through and how I'm feeling, so please don't make this harder than how it already is

VIRGO

I called Bomi and told her..

Bomi: I don't understand, I thought she was doing well

Me: I thought so too

Bomi: How is she holding up?

Me: She seems strong

Bomi: She's probably still in shock, it hasn't sunk in yet

Me: I wanna come back home

Bomi: Huh?

Me: I just wanna forget about everything and come back home

Bomi: That's a impulsive decision

Me: Bomi I wanna come back home, I'll apply to a different varsity next year. I just wanna forget about this one and everything that has happened here

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I opened the door, it was my Sister's husband Sizwe. I don't know why Seipati chose to settle down with an old man..

Sizwe: Hi Kets o

Me: Sizwe

Sizwe: Is your Sister home?

Me: Yes.. Come in

This man is bad news, he cheats, He also has a church of kids that he doesn't even support. He's a dead beat.. My Sister found out about some of the kids after marriage.

.

To be continued

No edits

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

56

AISHA

I was in the hospital for at least 3 days before I got discharged. I was feeling a bit better, than how I felt when I first got here..

I have never kept anything from my Mother, keeping this away from here was difficult enough..

I went back to Res when I was discharged, the down part of it was that Virgo hasn't come to see me ever since the first day I came here...

I didn't wanna care but I did, my heart was sore. I never thought aborting was this difficult. Why did I feel guilty when it was my own decision? When I did I get here?

Ase: Are you going to be okay?

Me: I think so

Ase I just told her I miscarried, never told her the truth..

How would she see me knowing I mis carried?
People usually just judge you..

Ase: If you need anything, know I'm here

Me: Thank you my friend

Ase: Aisha I'm truly sorry

Me: It's okay, it was not your fault

Ase: I don't know how it may feel to lose a child but..

Me: Ase it's okay you don't have too

Ase: I guess I'll see you later

Me: Okay

She walked out.. After she had gone out I went to lock the door..

VIRGO

I was home, came here 2 days ago..

I had given up on school for now, I'm planning to go to school next year but a different university. The university that I was in haboured a lot of pain that I was trying to forget. Pain that I didn't wanna remember..

I haven't spoken to Aisha ever since what happened, I didn't know what to say to her.

Bomi: Aisha needs to do a cleansing

Me: Why?

Bomi: A miscarriage it needs a cleansing

Me: I don't understand

Bomi: You wouldn't understand

Me: I don't know Bomi about it

Bomi: It's how it's supposed to be, or unless the baby is going to haunt her

Me: Can you call her and tell her?

Bomi: Virgo

Me: Bomi we not in good terms and you want this, please talk to her. We trying to deal with what happened separately

Bomi: I'll call her and see

Me: Thank you

AISHA

I was on a call with my Sister but didn't know how to tell her about what happened...

I needed someone to talk too, someone I call offload too..

Me: How are things between you and Mom?

Sis: You know Mom

Me: Tell me something, I have a friend who recently did abortion

Sis: Okay?

Me: She feels guilty

Sis: Why?

Me: It's her first so she said

Sis: Why is she feeling guilty?

Me: She's never done it before

Sis: It was her decision, she shouldn't feel guilty.
Abortion is normal one shouldn't feel guilty.. It's life,
many girls aborted it's not like it was an actual baby.
It was just blood

Me: Ohw I see

Sis: She shouldn't feel guilty

Me: I'll talk to her

POZIS WA

We were on our way home and I was lost deep in
my thoughts.. I decided to shy away from what my

Mother and Uncle were talking about..

They were talking about me, about how much of a disappointment I was..

Uncle: Both my kids are successful

Ma: How can Po be successful when all she chases is Men?

Uncle: Boys and school don't mix

Ma: She's one of my kids that I'm the least proud of

Uncle: Varsity is very expensive

Ma: Tell me about it

Uncle: There's nothing painful like having a useless child

Ma: I don't know what I did to deserve such a child

It's funny how she's talking like this but she's not even paying my fees, NSFAS is paying.

AISHA

My phone rang it was Bomi.. I hesitated first but then I answered..

Me: Hello?

Bomi: Hello baby how are you holding up?

Me: I'm better

Bomi: Aisha I'm sorry about what happened

Me: It's okay

Bomi: I don't know if this will be inappropriate or what but.. A cleansing is needed

Me: Ohw

Bomi: I'm sorry to just sprung it on you, I didn't wanna talk to your family before I talked to you

Me: No it's okay

Bomi: So you'll tell me when you ready?

Me: I will

Bomi: I will pay for everything that's needed

Me: Okay thank you

Bomi: J ust know we with you every step of the way

Me: Thank you

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:02] : SEASON FINALE

57

AISHA

I couldn't sleep, I kept on tossing and turning. I had a lot going through my mind and I was very distracted to study. My mind was invaded with negative thoughts, guilt, and shame..I laid on my back and stared at the ceiling. This whole cleansing process I also don't understand it, how will I explain to my Mother that I was actually pregnant and aborted? I've disappointed her enough already..

I thought for a while and then took my phone and called Virgo..

He sighed first upon picking up..

Virgo: Aisha

Me: Hi

Virgo: You good?

Me: I'm okay

There was a moment of awkward silence, and what I'm about to do is my way of trying to make them back off for good, hate me and then leave me alone..

Me: I need to talk to you about something

Virgo: What is it?

Me: I didn't mis carry, I aborted

He kept quiet..

Me: That guy I was with at Nandos, he sold me the pills

Virgo: So you came into my flat that night, murdered my baby and then slept next to me the whole night knowing very well what you've done?

Me: After everything you've put me through, I didn't want to be tied up to you forever

Virgo: If you hated me that much you could've waited for 9 months, you could've just given me my baby Aisha. I don't think there's a woman who has ever hurt me like you did, you killed me.. Yes you hated me but what did my baby do? I will never forgive you for this!

After saying that he hung up...

BOMI

Khosi: Aisha looks young to have gone through something like this

Me: Virgo is not coping too

Khosi: Abantwana Nkosi

Virgo came into the kitchen, he looked mad.

Me: Hey.. Hey.. Hey are we Tombstones?

Virgo: Not now Bomi

Me: What's wrong?

Virgo: By the way we won't be doing the cleansing anymore

Me: I don't understand

Virgo: Aisha aborted! She didn't miscarry she killed my baby

Me: What?

Khosi: Ndiqala uyiva ke le, inene yi fairytale "once upon a time"

Me: Now where are you going?

Virgo: I'll be right back

He walked out..

Me: Virgo!!!

AISHA

Ase came to see me, she found me crying. It hurts seeing my friend sad for me, when I actually killed the baby..

Ase: I think you should see the psychologist at school

Me: I don't need too

Ase: You in pain, I don't think depression will be good at this time seeing we approaching exams

Me: I aborted

Ase: That's not true right?

Me: It is.. I aborted

Ase: Yooh!

Me: I know I'm a murderer, a killer, an evil Person

Ase: No don't think like that, I don't know your reason for doing this but..

Me: I don't know how I ended up here

Ase: It's okay friend.. It's okay

VIRGO

I drove straight to her Mother's house again. This time, the door was opened by a lady that I think is her Sister..I introduced myself and she let me in, she called her Mother..

Ma: Do we have to call the Police now?

Me: Your Daughter aborted

The sister laughed..

Ma: This is getting ridiculous

I took out my phone and played the recording, all my calls are recorded..

They were left dumbfounded and speechless

I looked at the Sister..

Me: Not funny now

Ma: Th.. Thobeka come help me, my strength just left me. My heart is not beating well

Me: Your proclaimed golden Daughter is a murderer,
she slept next to me knowing what she did

Sis: You made your point now leave

I looked at the Mother..

Me: I wish your heart stops and you die, so she can
feel the pain I'm feeling now

Sis: I said leave!! Before I throw you out

Me: You? Throw me out?

Sis: Leave!!

Me: I am already leaving, but know y-

The Sister came to me..

Me: Da.. Da.. Da.. Don't even touch me! You disgust me, all of you disgust me!!

I clicked my tongue and walked out..

AISHA

Ase suggested we go get Ice cream, just take a walk and get fresh air..

Ase: Life is difficult my friend, we find ourselves doing things that we never thought we could do

My phone rang, it was my Sister..

Me: Thobeka

Thobeka: If Mom dies it's all your fault

Me: I'm sorry?

Thobeka: That scumbag boyfriend of yours was here telling us about your abortion scandal

Me: What? Not again.. Virgo is lying he's doing this because he can't accept our break up

Thobeka: He recorded you Aisha on the call, stop with the lies!! You screwed up and Mom's BP is spiking I just called an Ambulance

I stopped walking..

Thobeka: If Mom dies, I'll never forgive you

She hung up..

Me: Ohh my God Virgo what did you do?

Ase: What's wrong?

I called him..

Virgo: What?

Me: Why would you do something like that? (crying)

Virgo: Why shouldn't I?

Me: You see why I aborted? Imagine me being with someone like you

He laughed..

Virgo: That statement should be in reverse because the only thing good about you is your brains! Of which weren't good this time around, how can a woman not feel when a guy has cum inside of her? You are stupidly smart and don't ever think I did all of that because I loved you, I was just trying to push time until I get someone worthy! I was the best thing that has ever happened to you, even your friends are better looking than you that's why I fucked one of them.. The sad thing about this is that tomorrow I'll have the next best thing, and you. You won't get a boyfriend wanna know why? Because you ain't shit bitch!

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:02] : 58

VIRGO

I was back at home packing and preparing to go back to school. I wanted to make Aisha's life difficult..

Bomi walked in..

Bomi: And now?

Me: I'm going back to school

Bomi: Can I talk to you before you leave

Me: What is it?

Bomi: I may not know how you feel, because I once did what she did. More than once

Me: Yaa Bomi how is this about you?

Bomi: It's not but I'm saying that don't do things that will land you in trouble

Me: Like?

Bomi: Aisha texted me, told me what happened. Do you know you could've killed her Mother?

Me: I don't care at least she'll know how I'm feeling

Bomi: You had no right to do that Virgo, if Aisha had to tell her family she would've done it on her own

Me: She was never going to do it, she was going to keep on lying that she miscarried

Bomi: Maybe if you did right by her, she wouldn't have thought of doing that

Me: Why are you defending her? Is it because you relate? Why are you defending a bad deed? She's a murderer just like you

Bomi: Virgo seriously your attitude is boring now, and what you did was wrong. You never did love Aisha did you? Because if you did then you wouldn't have hurt that poor girl so much. Just let go of her, let her find someone who will love her right since you failed too. Not everything is about you the world doesn't revolve around you, look now. You were supposed to go to school and get a degree not all this nonsense you bringing me

Me: Aisha killed my baby and I'm supposed to be okay with that?

Bomi: It's life, deal with it!

AISHA

I was shattered. Scared, broken and thinking a lot. I don't know how my mother is holding up, my Sister doesn't pick up my calls..

I don't think I'll ever hate anyone the way that I hate Virgo right now. Who does that? I understand that he's angry but each time when he did his shit I never ran to his Mother and snitched on him..

I got a call from Bomi..

Me: Hello

Bomi: Aisha how is your Mother doing?

Me: I don't know

Bomi: Did you call and find out?

Me: My family currently hates me because of what Virgo did

Bomi: Aisha I'm sorry about his behavior but I also do feel like you could've prepared him for this, I know he's impossible but this was not the way to go because I feel you did this on purpose

Me: So your Son acting this way is my fault?

Bomi: I never said that

Me: I am not going to go back and forth with you, all that I'm asking is please tell your Son to stay away from me. I'm tired, emotionally, physically and mentally. Virgo is abusive and I'm tired of being his victim. I just want peace and he needs help because with this behavior he's definitely going to find himself in jail

Bomi: Ai-

Me: Bye Bomi

I hung up..

VIRGO

Before driving off I blasted Aisha on the net, all over social media..

I needed the world to know what she has done, how evil she is underneath. She's an evil Person and people should not be fooled by her innocent girl Persona..

ASENATHI

Me: What the hell?

Virgo has busted Aisha on social media even the University's private Facebook group..

He was calling her all sorts of shitty names, most guys who were commenting defended him. Called Aisha evil, it was horrible.

He included her pictures, he really went all out to deform her character. With everything that's happening, I feel like Aisha won't take this. She's going to be more depressed by this..

AISHA

When I went on Facebook I had a lot of notifications. Virgo put me on blast, even tagged me..

People were saying all horrible things, Futhi was there in the comment section also saying shit about me..

How am I to show myself in public now if the whole

school knows what I've done?

I threw my phone away and started crying..

Me: Why won't you leave me alone?? Please leave me alone!! (crying)

This was never part of the plan..

KOKETSO (KETSO)

What was happening on social media blew my brains out..

So Virgo's girlfriend aborted?

I went on the ledge to defend her, I don't blame her.
Virgo is a horrible Person:

"It's easy for you guys to judge this girl when you don't know how abusive the Person behind this post is. I am his ex and trust me he is horrible"

I had commented under the picture he uploaded on Instagram of hers and typed a whole lot of shit about her..

AISHA

Ase kept on knocking at my door..

Ase: Aisha?

Me: Please leave me alone!! J ust leave me alone!!
Go away

Ase: Please unlock the door

Me: I don't wanna see anyone Ase please leave me

alone! Just let me be

Ase: I'm sorry Aisha, you don't deserve what he's doing to you.. You can have him arrested, get a protection order against him. If not, then fight him the way he's fighting you. Tell your side of the story because it seems this language, is the only language he understands.. I got up from the bed and went to open for her..

Ase: Tell your truth too, I know you don't have too but people should know too the kind of Person he is

Me: I just want him to leave me alone

Ase: This is our only hope to make him back off, come on

She walked to the bed..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I was going back and forth with people who replied to my comment, I'm surprised Virgo hasn't blocked me yet..

What he is, or who he is rather needs to stop. This thing of him abusing women it should stop..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:03] : 59

AISHA

Asenathi looked at me.

Ase: You've been through the most Aisha with this guy, so when you said you had a running stomach.

He had locked you up?

I nodded..

Ase: Virgo could've killed you

Me: Right now I want peace with my family and I want him out of my life forever

Ase: This is detailed

Me: Very detailed and truthful

Ase: Are you ready?

Me: Yes

I posted the story, Ase helped me too by posting it on her Facebook account and the varsity Facebook group..

We posted it everywhere on social media..

VIRGO

I was back in my flat and arguing on Instagram with Kets o. What right does she have to speak nonsense under my post, that I've posted about Aisha. Something that she doesn't know about nor that it has anything to do with him..

I called her..

Kets o: What happened to being "Strangers" on a plane?

Me: Stay out of this

Ketso: Stay out of what?

Me: My affairs with my ex

Ketso: Virgo I don't understand, how do you say you love this girl but do such to her? Why embarrass her like that? Yes she aborted and I support her because you are a shitty Person. I know you going through the pain of not knowing your Father but it's no excuse to be this shitty and treat people like shit

Me: This has nothing to do with you, Ketso the reason why I didn't even feel anything when your baby died is because I give zero fucks about you and the child you were carrying. He was a wasted sperm that I gave nothing about, quite frankly he did well by dying saved himself from growing up without a father

Kets o: Wow! You are an evil Person

Me: Stay out of this, it has nothing to do with you

I hung up...

AISHA

Comments came in, some women were supportive, some were bashing me..

Ase: It doesn't matter who says what, what matters is that you got your side of the story out

Me: Can I wake up tomorrow and everything goes back to normal

My phone rang, it was my Sister..

Me: Thobeka

Thobeka: Mom has been admitted

Me: How is she?

Thobeka: She's going to be fine

Me: Thank God

Thobeka: Thought I should let you know

Me: Thank you

Thobeka: Bye

Me: Bye

I hung up...

VIRGO

I noticed that Aisha had posted something.

I commented:

"If I was so much of an abusive boyfriend to you then why didn't you leave me? If I locked you up in the bathroom for the whole day why didn't you go out and have me arrested the following day? Didn't you have a running stomach that day that you couldn't come to school because that's what everyone knows and that's what you told me and them, you weren't even at my flat that day, you only

visit me on weekends and leave Sunday never on school days don't lie. Caba the reason why I had to tell your family about this is because we wanted to do a cleansing for you but couldn't do it under false statements as miscarriage instead of abortion.

Didn't you tell your own Mother that I was lying, you weren't pregnant? So why is she sick if you weren't pregnant? I was there since from when we found out you were pregnant, I paid for your Dr's appointments and I was going to be there throughout. I just wish you could've carried the baby full term, I was going to raise my baby I had no problem. I grew up without a father and I made a promise to myself that I'll never be a dead beat father.. My ex who is busy talking on things she doesn't know, didn't even know who the baby daddy was and to top it off I buried the baby even though I didn't know if it was mine or not. She stayed at my house when she got kicked out made her own Mother seem evil.. Ketso can't say nothing I still have the recording where she was swearing at my mother and hers.. She even attacked her own Mother physically so please.. I understand that it's

your body, yes apparently it's right for you to abort because it's your body but if I was the one who didn't want the baby and ended up being a dead beat father I was going to be dragged. Abortion is only right when the decision is solely based on the woman just because it's your body and us Men we have no say!!

How will I trust another woman? I would understand if I wanted nothing to do with the baby but I was there.. The R500 appointments, R1500 sonar scan. I even gave you money every now and then. I was always there! You had no reason to do this, other women only wish to have the support you had from me. But then it's your body so it's okay fuck how I feel"

KOKETSO (KETSO)

Virgo has a brilliant way of making himself look like a victim. I feel for this girl Aisha, Virgo has her in his

hand. I wish she didn't do this only because Virgo will turn this situation and make it about him, she's going to be depressed more..

Now Men are going to support him on what he said, she should've let it go. After reading his reply he had 30 reactions already in just a minute. I checked his Facebook and he had changed his profile picture and put one of a guy who seems depressed, his whole TL was filled with his sorrows posts like:

"I never knew losing a child would be this difficult. I buried one not long ago then my current girlfriend aborted. I am broken, I even feel like ending my life. I even failed my exam now I have to repeat the year all because of the pain and depression I'm going through. The abortion was the nail to the coffin, I feel suicidal. I just want the pain to end"

I laughed whilst shaking my head. He probably typed this whilst playing a game. Virgo is toxic..

AISHA

I looked at his reply on my post. He was getting a lot of reactions, and a few replies in support of him.. This was going bad..

Ase: Damn he's good

Me: I think we should delete this

Ase: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

Ase: Okay let's delete

I deleted...

VIRGO

I checked again and she has deleted, luckily I took a screenshot. I then uploaded it on my TL:

"Why delete if you claim everything you posted is true"

She really doesn't know the game that she's playing, tomorrow I'm releasing the recordings. Both of Ketso swearing at my mother and Aisha admitting on the call that she aborted..

I wanna drive her to so much depression that she commits suicide, I wanna break her and the last sanity that she has..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:03] : 60

AISHA

I don't think there's a part of me that will ever make me date again, after what Virgo has put me through.. It felt like back when I used to be body shamed and discriminated upon. It was killing me, more especially because I tried telling my side of the story only for him to twist everything and made it about himself, played victim and made me look stupid..

A while back I would be excited about going to class but now, it's a drag and depressing.

I was deep in my thoughts from the bus to school, I hung my head in shame throughout until I got to

class. I was late, but the lecturer was not here yet. I am not usually late but I didn't wanna get up this morning so I had to drag myself to class..

It went a bit quiet when I got in class, I made my way to Ase. Virgo was sitting at the back with Futhi..

After sitting down, everyone went back to talking..

Ase: Are you okay?

Me: I don't know

I heard Futhi's voice from the back..

Futhi: Aisha hi

I know she was just trying to be vindictive..

Futhi: Tjo

Virgo: You really expect a murderer to greet you back? If I was you I'd be relieved

Futhi laughed..

Futhi: It's funny how people act all perfect but behind the scenes, things they do

Ase: But we are old to be doing this, seriously

Futhi: Ohw umthetheleli (The spokes person)

Virgo: Shame uBubbles

They both laughed..

Ase: You know Virgo channel that attitude to your studies hey.. You failed biology, a simple study of tissues. And I don't mean the one you use at the toilet

The class laughed, I looked at Ase..

Virgo: How does it feel to get 5min of fame Ase? Seriously I didn't even know you existed until today I even thought you were a special kid because you say nothing to none, good to see you have a mouth keep it up

Ase: And it's good to see that you still a jerk

Virgo: I'd rather be a jerk than to kiss ass, actually you an ass licker. You've been licking Aisha's ass ever since I've known you at least I'm a proud jerk I don't lick ass

Ase: Better an ass licker than what you are, if I were you. I wouldn't be proud of myself

Virgo: The only difference about you is that at least tomorrow I can wake up and be friends with anyone I want to be friends with, and you going to wake up as Ase the ass licker

Futhi: uBubbles shame kanti she has a voice

Ase: Anisebadala for le nonsense (You are old for this nonsense)

Virgo: And awus emubi for le way oyenzayo (And you are ugly for what you doing)

Me: J ust leave them, they ain't worth it

Virgo: Listen to the murderer, she knows what she's talking about

Futhi: Kahle kahle umbulali (the murderer)

Ase: Shame Futhi is Virgo's ass nice? Cause it seems like it's a lot of us who are kissing ass

I sighed..

An unexpected Person walked in, it was Jonathan.. He is probably here for Virgo, he looked around and saw me. He smiled at me and made his way to me..

Jo: Hey can I talk to you for a sec?

Me: Uhm Yes

I got up and we walked out..

J o: Sorry to just bother you like this especially in class

Me: No it's okay

J o: I wanted to give you this

He took out an envelope from his bag, a big envelope..

J o: If you get through this day, open it when you get to Res

Me: Ohw.. Uhm thank you

J o: Have a lovely day

Me: You too

I walked back in and sat down..

Ase: What did he want?

Me: I don't know he just gave me this envelope

Ase: Open it

Me: Not now, it came with instructions

Ase: Ohw

Futhi: So Aisha how did you do it

Ase: Not this again

Futhi: I wasn't talking to you

Ase: And I was talking to you

The lecturer walked in..

Lecturer: Good morning Class

KOKETSO (KETSO)

I got a missed call from Njabulo, I excused myself from work to go and call him back..

Njabs: Hi

Me: Hey I got your missed call

Njabs: Wanted to talk to you about something

Me: I am at work we can talk later, during our dinner date

Njabs: That won't be possible anymore

Me: Busy?

Njabs: I don't think we can continue anymore

Me: Why?

Njabs: I read your fight yesterday and what your ex said, did you really attack your Mother?

Me: It's a long story

Njabs: Did you?

Me: Yes but I was only protecting myself

He hung up..

Me: Njabulo?

Wow he hung up on me?

AISHA

After class I went to the bathroom to pee, I also felt like crying a bit. It's going to be a long day I swear.. I looked at myself in the mirror, then started breathing in and out.

Me: You can do this

I took my bag and my text book then walked to the door, when I opened Virgo was standing there at the

door. He freaked me out that I even dropped my text book.

The sad part about our building is that every floor has rest rooms, the ones on the second floor are mostly quiet because it's nothing but offices..

He picked it up..

Virgo: You dropped this

Me: Thank you

Instead of giving it to me, he hit me with it across the face then pushed me back in. He dragged me inside of the first toilet and locked the door..

Me: Vir-

He placed his hand over my mouth and his other arm around my neck. He was standing behind me...

Virgo: Do you know that I can kill you here and then walk out and no one will know what happened?
Lecturers are down lecturing some are at the clinics?

Now my breathing was unstable..

Virgo: It'll be a quick but painful death, your Mother won't know what happened to you no one will know what happened even if they do, I wouldn't care you'll be history

I couldn't say anything..

Virgo: Or I can go after Mommy Dearest

He kissed me on my cheek..

Virgo: I will remove my hand, if you dare scream I swear Aisha you will be sorry.. Understand?

I nodded..

He slowly lowered his hand..

Virgo: What did Jonathan want?

Me: He was just giving me forms to apply next year for BDS

He moved his hand and placed it on my breasts..

Virgo: What did Jonathan want?

Me: I already told you

Virgo: You are lying, that's why your heart is beating fast

Me: It's beating fast because I have an anxiety attack, you scaring me

Virgo: Let me see the envelope

Me: It's not with me, it's with Ase

Virgo: Aisha don't lie to me

Me: I'm not lying to you

He turned me around..

Virgo: Why are you doing this? Is this why you aborted? Because you and him are having a thing?

Me: No.. You can check my phone, you can ask him..
I'm not seeing anyone

He kept quiet...

Me: I love you

He looked at me, I placed my hand on his chest..

Me: I still love you

He held my hand and I got a cold shiver..

Virgo: You saying we can start over?

Me: Yes

Virgo: Try and get pregnant again?

Me: Yes

Virgo: Get married?

Me: Yes

He grabbed my locks..

Virgo: Do you think I'm a fool? I know you can say

anything right now to get out of this situation

Me: What do you want me to do? I will do anything

Virgo: We going to walk out of here together and go to my car, then we going to drive to my house not my flat.. My house

I swallowed..

Me: Okay

Virgo: Remember.. I know where home is, if you try anything stupid

Me: I know

Virgo: Let's go

He held my hand and we walked out of the rest room...

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:03] : 61

AISHA

In the mist of fear I really had hoped that I would talk Virgo from being an Ass, at the rest room no parts of what I said were true. I don't wanna go back to him, I don't want us fixing anything. I just wanted to fool him, so he doesn't hurt me..

When we walked out of the bathroom to the first floor, we bumped into Ase. Thank God we did..

Ase: Hey I was wondering what was taking too long

She looked at Virgo..

Ase: What the hell? I knew that you were up to no good when you were also missing from class.. Get away from her!

Ase pushed him off..

Ase: Stay away from her!!

Virgo looked at me..

Virgo: Don't forget what we talked about

He walked away.. I hugged Ase..

Me: Thank you

Ase: Did he hurt you?

Me: No I'm fine

Ase: Okay let's go to class

Me: I have to go to Res for now, I'm not safe around here

Ase: What did he do?

Me: I'll tell you all about it, I need you to accompany me to the bus

Ase: Okay, let's go

Me: Thank you

BOMI

I drove to Aisha's house, to see what has been happening.. See how her Mother is doing.. I found the Sister, and boy does she know how to run her mouth..

Me: I'm sorry about what happened to your Mother, I'm also glad that she's doing well

Her: Your Son is crazy

Me: I don't deny that he was wrong but Aisha did hurt him with the abortion

Her: My Sister would never do anything impulsive, for her to abort she had a good reason too.. I'm glad she did, your Son is shit

Me: My Son is not the one who committed suicide and hurt Aisha

Her: I really don't care about him, I don't care! He had no right to do what he did, coming here and blasting my sister like that?

Me: We wanted to do a cleansing for her since she aborted and we couldn't because she led us with false pretenses

Her: Why are you here?

Me: I just wanted to see if your Mother is okay

Her: J ust leave us alone please, if your Son shows up here again I'm going to stab him I swear!

I got up..

Her: Yeah go.. And don't ever come back here again!!

AISHA

The bus came after 10min, it waited for at least 30min before taking off..

I was relieved when I got to Res, he can't just walk in here. Security is tight, so I'm safe here..

I got to my room and the first thing I did was to open the envelope. I took the letter out followed by

an identification name tag, which read:

"Aisha

BACHELOR OF DENTAL SURGERY 1"

I closed my eyes.. This is my dream for next year since I've applied.. I read the letter

"If you reading this that means you made it through the day, I'm happy..

I saw and read what happened, the first thing I thought about was how it was affecting you

One thing you don't know is that I am good at reading people, and I've read your relationship with him. He was never sincere

I'm sorry you had to go through this, even if you did abort he had no right to handle it in that manner.

I'm not excusing what you did, I'm not justifying it also I'm not condemning you. You seem like a nice person and I don't think you did that intentionally just to diss him, you are not a vindictive Person.

He can only hurt you to an extent that you allow him too, if you give him too much power he will destroy you.

I like you a lot but at the same time I'm not doing this because I wanna get you, at least not now. Maybe after 5 years in your last year. If I approach now, I will be a rebound. There's a lot of shadow healing that you need to do all on your own. I can be here as a friend, a friend that can help you get through this but only if you don't want a relationship with him anymore. The last thing I want is to help you and then tomorrow you go back to him..

We are all here chasing the same goal which is graduating, don't let him take that away from you. That is one goal he should never take away from you..

Here is my number and if you text me, I'll always be there to protect you from him I hate abusers more especially because my Mother went through such and she made it out. You can too if you fight..

I hope you have a good day and don't be hard on yourself, don't dwell on guilt and hypothesis. You did what you did, own up to it, forgive yourself, forgive him and move on. You still have a goal to achieve"

That was a beautiful letter to read, I even found myself crying..

J ONATHAN

Reading through about Aisha and Virgo's scandal, I don't support nor condemn what she did but I feel like he shouldn't have put it out there. It's something that they were both meant to discuss privately..

I was walking to my car when he called out to me. I waited for him..

Virgo: Hey Man

Me: Hey

I read through her post when he uploaded it, and I don't think she had a reason to lie on him..

He extended his hand for a handshake I looked at it..

Me: I don't shake hands that abuse women

He chuckled..

Virgo: You don't know what's going on

Me: I know enough

Virgo: It has nothing to do with you

Me: If that was true, then you wouldn't have put it out there

Virgo: Stay away from my girlfriend

Me: What a title considering she wants nothing to

do with you!

Virgo: Stay away from her, I'm warning you!

He pushed me..

Me: What a waste

Virgo: What was that?

Me: What a waste

He came charging at me trying to punch me, his fist landed in the palm of my hand. I twisted it and pushed him off..

Me: This is not only embarrassing but childish, I'm not going to fight with you!

AISHA

I was torn between calling him or not.

I don't want anything to do with Men anymore, he might seem genuine but he could be another crazy.. I wanna focus on school, and see dating probably a few years of me working not now..

I folded the letter and put it away, I picked up the name tag and looked at it again..

It was a good gesture, a good motivation too

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:03] : 62

AISHA

The most difficult thing in life that one has to go through, is public humiliation. How do you recover from that when the world only believes what they see on the outside, but never what happens behind closed doors.

Almost everyone was for and supporting what Virgo said, not everyone wanted to understand my side of the story..

I will walk around campus everyday with people judging me, because they now know my nakedness, my shame and I can't hide that..

I had been debating with myself if I should contact Jonathan or not. I don't have a Brother or a Father that would defend me from such, that would scare

Virgo away and I need to go to school. I won't function if he's constantly there pressing me down with fear

I was worried about my family, all the threats he pulled. He was literally driving me into insanity, a part of me wanted to just leave everything. Go home and end it all, I'm tired, I'm barely holding on and he's got me right where he needed me..

I texted Jonathan when I got to school the following day, because when I stepped my foot down on the ground already fear was already creeping in..
Anxiety sky rocket high

Maybe when he sees me with Jonathan he will finally back off, it's a long shot but I'm hoping he will..

Me: I hope I didn't disturb you from attending your

first class

J o: No it's okay.. Are you okay?

Me: I'm trying

J o: You know Aisha you can only allow people to hurt you up to a certain limit

Me: Virgo gets so mad and he turns into something that I don't know, something scary and dangerous

J o: He's doing it because you allow him too

Me: I don't know how to fight him

J o: Have you tried standing up for yourself?

Me: I've never been able to

J o: Oh well here he comes

I turned and he walked in with Futhi, walked in through the entrance..

J o and I kept quiet, Virgo wasn't happy when he saw us.. They passed by us, didn't greet. Virgo literally pushed me forward making it look like he was "accidentally" bumping into me..

I collided with J o, he held me steady..

J o: Are you okay?

Me: This is what I go through everyday

J o: I don't know how to fight kids, it's abuse

I chuckled and shook my head..

J o: I have to go to class, we'll continue this conversation through texting

Me: Okay

J o: Give me a hug

Me: Huh?

J o: Do it

We hugged, for a while..

Then we broke the hug..

J o: I'll see you during lunchtime

Me: Okay

He walked away, I went to class and I saw Virgo walking in. So he saw Me and J o hugging..

I walked in and went to sit next to Ase, I expected the sly comments again but it was quiet...

J ONATHAN

I met up with Morgan..

Me: Hey.. Did you do me that favour?

Mo: Yeah what is it for again?

Me: Long story

He gave me the document..

Me: Does the abuse have to be visible? Bruises and what not?

Mo: Any form of Abuse is frowned upon, the victim will have to talk to the school psychologist then they file a report and the culprit will be excluded from the course and the school as a whole, they also at a threat of being blacklisted from all universities if they exhibit an abusive behavior

Me: Thank you Man

Mo: You welcome.. Let's get to class

VIRGO

As much as Aisha's actions piss me off but they also hurt me here and there. Seeing her that comfortable in the hands of another guy knowing very well what she put both of us through? She's not even remorseful life is moving on for her as if like she didn't do anything..

I looked at her as she continued talking to Ase as if like that push wasn't meant to ruin her day, worse she was answering back to questions that the Lecturer was asking..

It was seriously pissing me off!!!..

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I came back from work emotionally exhausted, I got home and it was quiet until I got to the passage. I heard my Sister talking from the bedroom, sounded like she was on a call..

Seipati: You really want me to believe that? That yellow bone of a woman only came to talk to you about your Son? He's 24 can't he come talk to you? You said you wanted nothing to do with him!! Do you know how this situation is difficult for me? Your Son used to date my Sister, they had a baby and I had to keep quiet about it, acted like I didn't know anything Sizwe!!

I walked in..

Me: What? Sizwe is Virgo's father? Seipati why you never said anything

Seipati: What are you doing eavesdropping? Get out!!

Me: Why did you keep this from me?

Seipati: Because it has nothing to do with you!! Get out!!

She pushed me out..

Seipati: And don't use that to your advantage!!!

She banged the door..

AISHA

Lecturer: I will see you guys next week, don't forget next week is our last week before the final exam.. We will be doing revision!

She took her things and left..

Me: Clinics you know what that means

Ase: Virgo uDom, he needs you more in the clinics than you do with him. Plus it's a public space he'll be more stupid to try something

We got up...

Me: I hope so

I took my things and we walked out..

We took the stairs, then I felt someone squeezing my butt. I quickly turned around.

Virgo: I'm just fixing your coat

Me: Ohw thank you

Ase: Th-

Virgo: Bye Ase we will see you after an hour

Ase: I'll see you girl

Me: Okay

We walked side by side to the clinic.. Quietly so, he was just forcing situations.. Acting like he was not an ass a while back..

He started walking in my path..

Me: Virgo

He stopped too..

Virgo: You the one who is in my path

Me: You giving me a headache can you please stop

Virgo: I'm not fighting, I don't wanna fight

Me: Please just leave me alone that's all I'm asking

He glanced down..

Virgo: You love him?

Me: I'll see you in our station, I see a few patients

I walked over to the station..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:03] : 63

J ONATHAN

There's this theory that says white men love women with big boobs, parts of it is true but that's not the only thing that attracted me to Aisha. I really like her and I hate to see her being made to believe that all Men are evil..

I want Virgo out of her life for a long time so she

can have a safe environment at school. I doubt that she would be evil to lie on him, her message or rather post entailed a lot of gruesome details. He locked her up for a day? Who does that? Which Man that loves his woman dearly would hurt her like this?

I want him to beat her up, publicly so. That will give more leverage for him to be blacklisted and have a case attached to his reputation. I know it's evil, I know it's gruesome but it's the only way we can nail him and ruin his life so next time he will think twice by putting through another woman what he's busy putting Aisha through....

AISHA

He was well composed at the clinic. He would be just like that because it's a public place, there's people. I was glad that I worked in peace without him breathing down my neck.. Ase fetched me, we walked out to the bus together...

When we were driving to Res, I received a call from my Mother. I got scared, don't know what she's going to say..

Me: Ma

Ma: Aisha

Me: How are you?

Ma: I'm better now

Me: I'm glad to hear that

Ma: We need to talk

Me: I am so sorry for everything, I'm sorry. I messed up with the wrong guy and he almost ruined my life

Ma: Abortion kodwa Aisha? It hurts me more than finding out that you were pregnant

Me: I didn't wanna disappoint you, thought I could take care of it all on my own

Ma: I know that I would've been disappointed but I

would've accepted the baby, we would've made a plan. I did have a room in my heart for such when you started dating, abortion what if this was your only child? The only child you'll have? I know and have seen that this boy is disrespectful but you don't hate an innocent baby because of their father's sins. If it was like that, I would've aborted you and Thobeka. Yes it was hard but nikhulile, you are fortunate because you have the Brains. You would've still attained your qualification and worked

Me: I just didn't want him to be a part of me forever
Ma, this guy has hurt me beyond anything. He scares me, he is a monster and I don't imagine myself having a child with someone like that

Ma: Akusenani ke but you have to do the cleansing so this child doesn't block your success

Me: Okay

Ma: You'll come over this weekend and we will see

Me: Thank you

Ma: I hope this is a lesson, I have faith in you. You are the only child that at least has potential. I don't

hate Thobeka but every Parent deserves a child that can do right

Me: It is a lesson learned

Ma: Please focus on school, you will see Men after. They are a lot, they are out there, and when you patient God will bring the one tailored for you. But if you go out chasing love, you'll be hurt all the time

Me: I understand Ma

Ma: I will get discharged soon, there's no point in being angry about this situation, it'll make me more sick

Me: I know

Ma: Bye ke Nana

Me: Bye

That was better, all I needed was her forgiveness..

VIRGO

I was walking to my car when I received a call from Koketso. I don't know what she wants..

Me: What do you want?

Ketso: That's rude

Me: What do you want?

Ketso: I have information, about your Father I stopped..

Me: What?

Ketso: I know who your Father is

Me: I don't know what sick game you pl-

Ketso: You two kinda look the same, just that he's a bit dark and your coloured genes worked for you

Me: You a low life you know that right?

Ketso: Agh

She hung up..

When I got into the car, I received a text from her..

It was a picture of the guy and all his information, address and everything...

KOKETS O (KETS O)

My Sister came bursting into my bedroom..

Me: What the hell?

Seipati: I know you will use what you heard for your own advantage because you hate me!

Me: Voetsek get out of my room!

Seipati: It's none of your business!

Me: Get out of my bedroom!!

Seipati: If you leak this out, I will kill you

I got up and out of bed..

Me: Get out!! You murderer

Seipati: I'm glad your Son died, what child would want such an evil Mother

Me: Can't even hold up a marriage, can't even tame your husband! Get out!!

Seipati: I don't know how you became my sister!

Me: Get out!! Out!!

I pushed her out and closed the door..

VIRGO

I called Bomi..

Bomi: Baby

Me: Bomi who is my Father?

Bomi: We've had this conversation before

Me: His name is Sizwe right? Sizwe Hlatshtwayo?

She kept quiet..

Bomi: No

Me: Bomi he looks like me!

Bomi: How did you? Virgo where do you get this from?

Me: I heard to find out from Ketso imagine Ketso!!

Bomi: What are you talking about?

Me: I searched him, her sister is married to my father!

Bomi: Virgo listen to me, Sizwe wants nothing to do with you

Me: So says a woman whose been saying "I don't know your father"

Bomi: I kept this from you because I didn't want you to be disappointed, he doesn't want nothing to do with you

Me: I'd rather hear it from you than him!

Bomi: I am your Mother listen to me!

I hung up...

BOMI

I slammed my phone against the table and screamed in frustration..

Who the hell does this Kets o girl think she is?

I took a few deep breaths. She doesn't know who he is messing with..

I picked my phone again and called someone

Ace: Ehh long time

Me: Ace

Ace: Ugrand?

Me: J onga I need you to do something for me

Ace: Okay?

Me: I need you to kill someone for me

Ace: Sebakwenzeni manje? (what did they do to you)

Me: Can you do it?

Ace: 10k

Ace is a low life that specializes in such crimes, this Ketso has gone too far. I've been patient with her for long enough now...

AISHA

I took a shower when I got to Res, then after I called J o. I've been downplaying calling him

J o: Hello?

I kept quiet..

J o: Hello?

Me: Hi

J o: Hi

Me: It's.. It's Aisha

J o: Hi Aisha

Me: Hi J o

He laughed..

Me: Thank you for the letter and the name tag

J o: You welcome.. How was the rest of your day?

Me: It was not bad, yours?

J o: It was okay

Me: Thank you again J o

J o: You welcome

Me: Look uhm.. I appreciate what you doing but I d-

J o: I just wanna be friends that's all

Me: J ust friends?

J o: I promis e

Me: Okay we'll see

J o: Thank you

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 64

VIRGO

I drove straight to his house, from the address that Kets o provided me with.

I was parked on the other side of his street, just

opposite his house and looked at it for hours.
Debating with myself if I should go in or not..

He lived in a hood but the bond side of houses, his house was beautiful outside. Not big, not small either but very beautiful..

As I was sitting there, I saw a car pulling up. It could be him. Indeed it was him, when he got out to open the gate. That's when I got out too, I needed to talk to him. I needed to understand what happened, from him..

I slowly approached him, when he turned back to go to his car. He saw me..

He looked at me and I didn't know what to say, it was him. The picture I saw, it was exactly him..

Me: Hi

He shook his head..

Dad: What are you doing here?

Me: You know me?

Dad: Ofcourse I know you! What are you doing here?

Me: I.. I needed to see you, talk to you

Dad: For what exactly? Do you want money? You seem like a child well taken care of

Me: I don't need your money, my Mother is doing a pretty good job on her own

Dad: Then why are you here?

Me: I just wanted to see the man who was involved in my creation. What did I do to you? Why you never.. What did I do? What kind of a Father abandons his Kid?

Dad: The type that didn't want the kid

He walked closer..

Dad: This might sting and I'm sorry but I never wanted you, see.. Your Mother was a hoe! With my first marriage there was a lot of stress and I needed a stress reliever and she was there, it was never meant to be serious. She's had a lot of abortions before you, I don't know why she kept you. Maybe she wanted you I don't know but the family I have now, the kids I have and wanted I'm there in their

lives.. I'm sorry she put you through such but I never wanted you. Not back then, not even now and that's the bitter truth. So go back to your car and don't ever come back here!

So Bomi wasn't lying, this Man truly didn't want me. It broke my heart, it broke my heart deeply. I don't want his money just wanted to know him that's all, wanted to have a father that's all!!!!

BOMI

This place was shady.. I looked around..

Ace: Relax you safe here

I handed him the envelope..

Me: I wrote her address and put the piece of paper inside, your money is also included in there.. 5k, and the other 5k when the job is done..

I took out my phone and showed him her picture..

Me: This is her, memorize the picture, her name is Koketso

Ace: She's beautiful and Young, how did this kid piss you off?

Me: The details are not important

Ace: J ust making conversation

Me: Can you do it or not?

Ace: I can do it

Me: I don't want it traceable back to me

Ace: Bomi ngiwunjandini (I'm a dog), she's not my first kill and not my last one too

Me: Okay then I'll hear from you

He took the envelope..

Me: Walk me out, I don't like the eyes they giving me

VIRGO

I drove halfway then pulled over, kept thinking about what that man said and tears couldn't stop streaming down..

I called Bomi, she took forever to pick up..

Bomi: I was busy with something

I sniffed..

Bomi: What's wrong? What happened?

Me: I drove up to his house and confronted him

I heard her exhaling..

Bomi: What happened baby?

Me: You were right, he doesn't want me Bomi he said to my face. He didn't flinch, showed no

emotion. He.. He didn't care

Bomi: Ohhhhhh Ludwe

Me: You were right.. I'm sorry

Bomi: We don't need him Baby, we've done so well without him

Me: It hurts Ma, I just wanted a relationship with him

She started crying..

Bomi: I know.. I'm sorry, he doesn't deserve you baby.. He's the my most regrettable mistake

(Silence)

Bomi: Come home this weekend, Remember you wanted an upgrade? A BMW?

Me: A new car won't make it better

Bomi: I know but it's good wheels

Me: Ya maybe

Bomi: I love you so much baby and it hurts me more to hear you sobbing like this. You didn't have to find out like this

Me: At least now I know the truth

Bomi: At least

Me: Let me drive back, I love you

Bomi: I love you more

AISHA

I was studying when J o's call interrupted me.

Me: Hey

J o: Hey

Me: How are you?

J o: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good

J o: J ust wanted to say goodnight

Me: That's nice.. Thank you

J o: Guess I'll see you tomorrow at school?

Me: Okay

J o: Good night

Me: Good night

I hung up...

BOMI

I hit the wheel repeatedly..

Me: Fuck!! Fuck!!! Fuck!!

I groaned..

Me: Fuck!!!!

I have a lot to lose if I go after Ketso on my own, I hope Ace will deliver. That skunk won't know what hit her..

AISHA

Surprisingly I got a call from Virgo, I didn't pick up. I let it ring until it stopped..

It was followed by a text:

"Please pick up, I need you"

I deleted the message and blocked his calls

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 65

AISHA

I was opting for another Peaceful day, since my Mother and I made peace. I felt like I could concur it all. I don't care anymore about what others say about me, I cannot change how people see me and view me based on only one side of the story. I don't care anymore, I just don't care..

Arriving at school, I got a call from J o wishing me a

good day ahead. At least even with all the shit I still have a friend..

We attended the our morning classes, Virgo came in late. He didn't look okay. You can just tell when you look at someone in the face and you can clearly see that they not okay.. I didn't care about what he was going through, he's not my responsibility. If it's about the breakup then I do wish he gets over it pretty soon, one thing for sure. One thing I stand by is that I'm not going back to him....

BOMI

I didn't go to work today, I was too much in my feelings and very much worried about my Son. I have never heard him that broken before, and I pray he doesn't do anything that might be detrimental to him..

Khosi: I never liked that girl, she's not a good Person. It was not her place to do that. It was not her business to do that

Me: I don't know why she would do that, she was dating him. She lived here, I was willing to be there for her every step of the way. I supported her, then she goes and does this?

Khosi: I hope Ludwe is okay, I hope he gets through this

Me: Me too.. I can't lose my Son

Khosi: You won't, that child is very strong

Me: I pray so

AISHA

Our last class we were free, our lecturer was supervising at the clinic. It was a okay because we've covered almost everything.

The down part about this day was that Ase didn't come to school, she wasn't feeling well. She had started on her periods.

I was sitting at the park, right close to our Dental building. I was sitting on the ground and reading through my manual..

Voice: Mind if I join?

I looked up, it was J o..

Me: Yes

He sat next to me..

J o: Saw you sitting here, decided to go get pies and juice. I don't know what would've happened if you moved

I chuckled..

Me: Good for you that I didn't move

J o: True.. Here

He handed me the pie and juice..

J o: Cheese&Salami

Me: I like Cheese&Salami, I also like pepper steak pie

Jo: Then I'm lucky

Me: Thank you for being there for me, thank you for not judging me

Jo: We all not perfect, I'm not at liberty to judge anyone

Me: How do you feel about exams coming up?

Jo: Nervous

Me: I'm sure you'll do great

J o: You'll do great too

He took out his text books too then we studied, especially Microbiology because it's a combined course..

Me: I like microbiology but it looks dangerous

J o: It is but safety precautionary measures are always taken

Me: True

Virgo made his way to us..

Me: What now?

J o: This is going to get boring

He had his hoody hat on..

He stood in front of us..

Virgo: Aisha

I looked up at him..

Me: Yes?

Virgo: Can we talk?

Me: No

Virgo: Why?

Me: You and I have nothing to talk about

Virgo: The last time I checked, you and I are still dating.. We never broke up

Me: You seriously think that you and I are still an item? After everything you've put me through?

Virgo: We had problems so what?

Me: Problems? Since when has abused been a problem?

Virgo: Abuse? Are you serious?

Jo: Is this going to take forever? We having lunch

and studying

Virgo: Get up!

Me: What?

I said get up!!

He roughly pulled me up..

J o got up too..

J o: Leave her alone!

Virgo punched and then pushed J o back, J o fell. He grabbed me and forced me to walk. I yanked my arm from his grip. He slapped me, then slapped me again and tackled me to the ground. When I was on the ground he started kicking me repeatedly just all over my body. I was screaming for help..

It took a while before J o came to my rescue, bystanders were now screaming and coming over. J o threw Virgo on the ground, they actually both fell

to the ground..

I was still in on the ground in pain..

Some girls came up to me to help me up.

As they were helping me up, Virgo pushed J o off him then got up and ran off..

Girl1: Ohh my goodness are you okay?

I couldn't stand up straight, I was in pain..

Girl 2: We need to get her to the Nurse's office

The other girl took my things whilst the other one helped me to walk. I looked at J o on the ground..

Me: J o?

Girl 2: He's going to be okay, let's go

KOKETS O (KETS O)

I went to fish&chips for lunch..

Got myself a small packet of chips, half a loaf of bread. Atchaar and a can of coke. I sat alone at the chairs outside to eat..

This other guy came and sat opposite me.

Him: Eks e

Me: Hi

Him: Sorry for just disturbing you like this

Me: No it's okay

Him: Well too bad you already paid for your
Lunch

Me: Yeah

I faked a smile..

Him: I know I'm boring you right now but, I'm here to
save you from the guy sitting behind you

Me: Huh?

Him: Don't turn around as yet, he's been following
you ever since from the clothing store

(Silence)

Him: Now you can turn

I turned around, he did look unsavory..

Him: Don't freak out he might just be after your
purse and your phone

Me: That's insane

Him: I know.. I'll sit here until you finished with your lunch

Me: Yes.. Please I'd like that

Him: You welcome

Me: Koketso

Him: Ace

Me: You can share in my food

Him: Ta Ngwana (Thank you)

AISHA

They attended to me very quickly at the office. The Nurse checked me, I was bruised pretty bad..

Nurse: We going to have to transfer you to the hospital next door, so they can do an Xray. See if you don't have any broken ribs and also check for internal bleeding. You bruised pretty bad even a

tender touch you flinch

Me: Am I going to be okay? I have exams coming up

Nurse: I hope so, I'll write you a referral letter and call an Ambulance

VIRGO

I drove out of school like a mad Person, I drove straight home not to the flat..

It wasn't supposed to happen like that, not in public at least. I attacked two students and there were witnesses, this doesn't look good for me..

AISHA

The ambulance didn't take long to come,
paramedics transferred me on the stretcher bed
and wheeled me out..

At the reception, J o was sitting there..

He came up to me..

J o: Hey

Me: Are you okay?

J o: I'm good.. Let's worry about you

He had my things, think the girls gave them to him..

J o: Can I go with her to the hospital?

The Paramedics agreed..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 66

AISHA

J o forced through that I needed to open a case. Somehow he recorded the altercation, now I see why he took long to defend me against Virgo. I don't know if this was right, I mean Bomi is well off financially and what if Virgo doesn't get arrested? He's going to come back and finish off what he started.

J o: We have enough evidence to bury him, he will be blacklisted and go to jail too

Me: This guy, his Mother is rich

J o: He didn't attack you only, he attacked me too. The reason why I didn't attack him back fully is

because I want him to be buried

I looked at him, he's white. It changes everything, this country is sensitive towards white people but at the same time Virgo's Mother is rich she can make the case go away..

Me: I just don't want to find myself in a more heavy situation than this one

Jo: Aisha don't look at this as a glass half full. You saying his Mother can make this go away, but what if he goes down? You'll never know until you do it. Don't let fear cripple you into fighting back the best way you can, he humiliated you, it's time people know the real him. This is your side of the story, the side that will tell the truth for you

I thought for a while..

Me: Okay.. Let's try

J o: Thank you.. I'll talk to the Dr to call the cops if you strong enough to talk to them

Me: I'll try

VIRGO

I got home and told my Mother what happened, she freaked out.. I was panicking too. When I attacked Aisha, I blacked out. Even her screams didn't hold me back, I only stopped when J o came through. If J o wasn't there or any other Person, I could've killed her

This is the lowest I've went, I don't know why I did it. I regret doing it and I don't think I'll make it right. There has been so many "I'm sorry", I don't think

she'll ever forgive me for this..

Bomi: Virgo there were witnesses, you beat her in a public place?

Me: I didn't mean too

Bomi: There were witnesses

Me: I just don't wanna go to jail

Bomi: It would've been better if you did this privately just the two of you, but in public? Not only do you have a case but you'll be blacklisted

Me: I don't care Bomi okay? I don't care if any Tom and Dick of a university blacklist me I just don't wanna go to jail

Bomi: Aisha might be easy to manipulate but a white boy was involved? You know how the country prefers that kind?

Me: Can you make it go away?

Bomi: I.. I don't know Virgo I'm not promising

I brushed my face with my hands..

AISHA

Me: Thank you

Nurse: You welcome

The other Patients in the ward couldn't stop looking at Jo. Probably wondering if we in a relationship or

what..

Me: Thank you for being here

J o: You welcome

Me: The cops are coming when?

J o: They will be here

Me: How are the X-rays? I didn't wanna know about how much damage was done

J o: You'll be fine, no internal damage was done.
How is the pain?

Me: With the pain killers they better, I'm just sleepy

J o: Let me allow you to rest then

Me: Okay

J o: I'll come back after an hour or so

Me: Thank you for everything

J o: You welcome

KOKETS O (KETS O)

Right after work as I was going to catch a taxi home, I bumped into this Ace guy..

Ace: If I didn't know better, I'd say you are following me

Me: Or maybe it's the other way around

He was holding a pack of nappies..

Ace: It's for my Daughter, she's only 8 months old

Me: A present Father, that's impressive

Ace: Yes she's my world

Me: Are you and the Mother still an item?

Ace: No.. She, she cheated

Me: I'm sorry

He seemed to be a bit rough around the edges, but also warm inside. A present Father that's impressive..

Me: I have to get home then

Ace: I can give you a ride

I looked at him..

Me: Okay.. You dropping me off at home

Ace: If my baby Mama sees you in the front sit, you my distant cousin

I chuckled...

VIRGO

Bomi: Okay look, you need to pack and leave

Me: What?

Bomi: Go hide out at cape town, Durban, free state just far away from here until the dust settles

Me: Bomi

Bomi: Come on pack up Virgo, I'll get you a plane ticket before this whole thing spirals out of control.. I'll get you a place there until I figure out how to get rid of this situation

I nodded..

Me: I think it's a good idea

Bomi: Where do you wanna go?

Me: Eastern Cape, wanna go back home

She looked at me..

Me: I know Grandma's house is no more but I
wanna be that side

Ma: Okay pick and choose a place that side and
we'll take it from there

Me: Thank you, I know I disappoint you a lot but
thank you

Ma: It's okay.. We'll get through this

KOKETS O (KETS O)

He was driving a CITI golf..

Ace: We halfway through

Me: I don't want Baby Mama drama

He chuckled..

Ace: Don't worry about her, I can handle her

Me: Have you dated after her?

Ace: No.. Don't want history to repeat itself

Me: Shame.. You need to let go

Ace: Are you hitting on me right now?

Me: What? Don't be ridiculous!

He chuckled..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 67

AISHA

I was scared, when Virgo came out to social media about my abortion. When I put out my side of the story everyone believed him than me, so talking to the cops right now I don't know if they will believe me..

Officer 1: You are in a safe place I want you to know that. All we want, is the truth from the beginning so we can help you, help us to put him away. You are here, he's out there. We started from the school because they reported the incident already, that's why we here to also get your side of the story

I looked at J o, he nodded..

Me: We.. We were dating, he was my boyfriend. This is not the first incident. He once locked me up in his flat for the whole day that I missed school

Officer: Is this the first time he's hit you?

Me: No. It was usually a slap, a push nothing so evident

Officer: You didn't report him?

Me: I didn't think it was serious, plus he has a rich Mother who bails him out

Officer: I understand.. Could you please do me a favour?

Me: Yes

Officer: Write down his address for me, both his home address and where he stays outside of school

Me: I don't know his home address but I know where he stays the town. I can describe the house for you

Officer: That's helpful

Me: His renting at Wonderpark, flat 32

Officer: That's helpful, you did well

The Dr walked in..

Dr: Here is the report on the extent of her injuries
and the X-rays

Officer: Thank you

Me: You will catch him right? I'm tired of living in
fear

Officer: You are a strong young woman, most of the
time we only get a call when a woman has already
been killed by her lover. I promise you that you
won't be a static you deserve to live in a harmless
free environment. It's your right

Me: Thank you

Officer: We will be in touch

Me: Thank you

They walked out..

Me: That went better than I thought

J o: You did very well

Me: I hope so

Me: Thank you for your support

Me: You welcome

VIRGO

My Mom wanted to put me on a flight, but I decided to drive. Incase Aisha has already snitched to the cops. It's going to be a long drive yes, but I needed to get away from this place, my life and my freedom depended on it..

I just drove and kept on driving, I don't know which part of Eastern Cape I was going to make my new home but.. Any good place there will to for now

I stopped halfway to get something to eat, when you on the run every eye on you looks suspicious. I won't be eating here, I'll make it a takeaway. I'll eat in the car..

I wasn't using my car, I was using one of Bomi's car. She said she will have my car driven and dumped somewhere. She was really going out of her way to help me..

KOKETSO (KETSO)

Me: Why are you doing this? You don't even know me (crying)

Ace: Further away

He had his gun pointed at me. We were in a deserted area, an area with tall grass and a water

tank. The main road was far from where he led me.
He led me deep, where it was quiet and out of sight..

I knelt down..

Me: Please why are you doing this?

Ace: Okay you deserve to know at least the Person
you pissed

I looked at him..

Ace: Bomi, Virgo's Mother

Me: What? Why?

Ace: You entered affairs that didn't want you, telling
that boy about his Father

Me: I didn't mean to cause any problems.. I was just
trying to help

Ace: Ohw well look where that got you

Me: Please don't do this

He walked closer and put the gun on my forehead..

Me: Please (crying)

He pulled the trigger..

BOMI

I had Virgo's car taken away to be left abandoned somewhere. Having money helps, it helps very much because you can get anyone to do a job..

I was stressed and nervous. Killing Aisha can open a can of worms, Virgo has already attacked her and if I have her killed my Son will have a murder case attached to him..

This would've been easier if the white boy was not involved, I can't make it go away just like that..

He said he would call, call every hour and I'm waiting closely by my phone..

AISHA

I wanted to get out of here, they told me at least in two days time.. I called my Mother, I don't want to keep anything from her now.

Ma: Kodwa uright?

Me: I'm okay Ma

Ma: I'm glad you opened a case against him Nana, this boy sounds troubled. Unstable

Me: That he is.. I just want him put away Ma so that I can get back to life as normal

Ma: I know baby.. Aisha please before you consider dating again pray on it, right now. I want you to focus on school

Me: I promise

Ma: You do need a cleansing, this dark cloud has to go and please don't forget to pray

Me: I won't Ma.. I promise

Ma: Okay try to get some rest then I'll call you later on or tomorrow morning

Me: Okay Ma, thank you

Ma: Pray even in your heart

Me: I'll do so

Ma: I love you.. Bye

Me: I love you too

BOMI

My phone rang, it was Ace. I picked up..

Me: Ace

Ace: It's done

I even forgot about that, I was busy worrying about my Son

Me: Are you sure she's dead?

Ace: Do you want me to take pictures?

Me: No it's okay.. I'll give you your money tomorrow

Ace: Pleasure doing business with you

Me: Likewise

VIRGO

I got back in the car with my food and a can of an energy drink. I wasn't angry. I was hurt, I was broken. I had no reason to do that..

This situation I won't be able to fix it, how do you come back from this?

I can't go to jail, jail is cruel. Full of criminals, true criminals.. Criminals that are there for serious crimes, a pretty boy like me. I definitely won't survive..

Aisha might be stupid enough not to open a case, but J o. He would want to nail me..

If this happened privately, I would've manipulated her but in public. She has a strong case..

AISHA

Me: You didn't have to come

Ase: Are you kidding? It's all over Facebook and our group

Me: I don't even wanna check

Ase: Actually they are on your side, his picture is all over social media

Me: Really?

Ase: J o put the story out, the video and his picture

Me: Really?

Ase: Yes, at least made the bad press go away. The abortion scandal. Everyone is in your support

Me: Wow

Ase: I just hope they lock him up, I think that's why the cops are eager to find him. Social media is putting pressure on the SAPS

Me: At least, one thing is going my way

Ase: Very true, I'm glad

BOMI

I called him, he picked up..

Me: You said you gonna call every hour

Virgo: I know, I was just lost in my thoughts

Me: How far along?

Virgo: Still far

Me: It's going to be okay

Virgo: I hope so

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 68

BOMI

[A MONTH LATER]

It took a bit of a while for Kets o's body to be discovered, from when that incident happened. She was discovered 2 weeks ago, and her story made the news. One bullet in her head, 2 in the tummy so the news outlets reported. It was a sad situation for those closest to her. When I heard, I went to visit the family and actually helped by paying for the funeral arrangements. Kets o's sister was somewhat rude unprovoked and I understand why. Sizwe is a jerk, his first marriage didn't last and it seems like this one also is hitting rock bottom. Seipati might've tolerated him long enough. She is his second

marriage. She was not in the picture when Sizwe and I had an affair, but I'm suspecting that kids followed after that. He has a lot of kids that he's not taking responsibility for..

It was a Sunday, we were at the church building where the funeral service was held. They had a big picture of her next to her coffin, flowers and white candles. It was a bit full, and it was a sad service. The people who were speaking, some couldn't hold back their tears. Her Mother was struggling more with her pain and emotions. I didn't have to do this, I didn't wanna do this but she's the reason why my Son is in this situation. Had she not told him, Virgo wouldn't have lost his temper against Aisha and he would still be here.. I fixed my shades when my phone vibrated. I got up and walked out..

Me: Hello?

Officer: It's done

I sighed..

Officer: I destroyed the case file, it'll be like she never opened a case against him

Me: The white boy?

Officer: The video only showed your Son attacking the girl, never showed him and the white boy fighting. It's his word against your Sons

Me: Can my Son come back home?

Officer: Yes

Me: Thank you very much, at least that's good news

Officer: You welcome

I hung up.. I had to get the officer in charge of the case to make it go away, I didn't think we were going to succeed..

I sat down..

AISHA

I was at home. Yesterday I went for the cleansing, it was long overdue..

I was recovering very well or have recovered well from the beating. I haven't heard from Virgo. His number is not working, I can't find him on social media. It's like he never existed in my life.. It was peaceful and I was happy with it. I was very happy with it, because it gave me time to concentrate on my studies especially since we starting with exams.

I was going back to school tomorrow, my first exam is on Tuesday. Unfortunately I wasn't accepted for BDS next year, but it's okay. I'll continue with my current course, maybe after graduation and serving my bursary for 3 years I will go back.. Jo and I we still very good friends, we not dating just friends..

My Mom keeps on saying I might not go back, the payment scale of a Dental Therapist depending on the province it's R16 000- R23 000 a month,

Gauteng being the most paying and Limpopo being the least paying..

My bursary is from Gauteng so I'm hoping for at least 18k salary per month..

Thobeka: Here's your coffee

Me: Thank you

Thobeka has quit her job, she says it wasn't going well anymore, the environment was toxic. She sells amagwinya (vetkoeks), sandwiches, muffins, pizza bread slices that she makes herself and juice in this area that's full of firms and companies. That certain section only has firms and companies...

She started this month and she's making good money. In the first week she made made R800. R1500 the second and 3rd week. We will see how it goes this week. She works from Mon-Fri. 7:00-15:00

Me: Thank you

Since this new found business, she's better. She doesn't even stress Mom that much and it seems she'll be making more money than she used too when she was still working, and she's working alone with no one breathing down her neck..

Thobeka: So I was thinking

Me: Yes?

Thobeka: I wanna add other things

Me: That's good

Thobeka: I wanna do plates for lunch

Me: Your business is really doing well

Thobeka: Ahhhhh most of those Men like me so

Me: That works to your advantage.. I'm proud of you

Thobeka: I'm proud of myself, maybe when business is booming I'll buy a second hand car a

really cheap one to get me by also to other places where I can sell

Me: By next year you'll be far

Thobeka: Very

Ma: I'm just proud of you girls, now I can die peacefully. One is promising to be a good business woman, one is promising to be a Dental Therapist

Thobeka: You not going to die Ma, at least not now

Ma: I'm very proud of you and I wish you nothing but the best, I pray God only multiples your success both of you

Me: You sound like a woman who is going to die soon

Ma: Most Parents curse their Children, despite both your mistakes but you guys picked yourselves up and kept moving.. I am a proud Parent

Thobeka and I smiled...

VIRGO

I held her waist tight as I came...

Me: Ohh fuck!!! Ohh fuck baby!!

She kissed me..

I tried to catch my breath..

She kissed me again..

Afrika: That was good

I slid out of her, and then rolled off the condom..

When I got here, I didn't know where to settle down. Until a few days later of my getting here, Uitenhage was a comfortable place not to mention that I met this beautiful lady by the name of Afrika. Her flat is next door mine, she's 2 years older than me and works at Capitec..

My phone rang..

Afrika: Now?

Me: It could be an important call

I stretched my hand to get it, it was my Mom.

Me: It's my Mom

I answered..

Me: Ma

Bomi: I have good news!

Me: Yeah?

Bomi: You can come back home, I've made it all go away

I turned and looked at Afrika..

Me: Uhm about that

Ma: What?

Me: I'm going to stay here, I like it here

Ma: What?

Afrika looked at me..

Me: I like it here

Ma: Virgo?

Me: I'm still going to visit you don't worry but I
wanna stay here for a while

She exhaled..

Me: Maybe a year or two see how it goes

Ma: Ohw I see

Me: I'll call you later, I'm taking a walk

Ma: I'm at Kets o's funeral

Me: Ohw yeah how did it go?

Ma: It was sad

Me: It's sad what happened to her

Ma: I know

Me: I'll call you later

Ma: Okay baby.. I love you

Me: I love you too

Ma: Bye

I hung up..

Afrika: You staying?

Me: I'm staying

Afrika: I like that very much

BOMI

I looked at my phone and chuckled..

I did this thinking he will come back but he doesn't wanna come back, I guess my little boy is growing up after all..

I got up from the chair and went to my car..

.

To be continued

[03/14, 22:04] : 69

AISHA

[3 YEARS LATER]

The lecture hall was full, it was our Oath taking day. Our class filled the first row, second, and third row. Parents, relatives whoever came was sitting on the other side of the chairs. The school had hired graduation gowns for us but we weren't wearing the hats, it was just oath taking.

Professor: Our next candidate is Aisha Ngwenya

I got up..

Professor: she passed all her modules and obtained 3 distinctions in the following modules: Maxillo-facial and oral surgery, Oral medicine&Periodontoly,

as well as in Public health

Everyone started clapping..

I looked at my Mother and Sister, they were clapping with smiles on their faces and my lecturers seemed proud too..

I sat down again. The professor went on to call the others, I looked at Ase she smiled at me. She got only 1 distinction.. We were taking Oath with Oral health students too who completed their course. The graduation ceremony will be held next year in May..

I already know where I'm going to work, I'm going to be working in Pretoria.. It's not far away from home but not too close too.

I didn't wanna work too close to home..

Dean: May our Graduates please stand up so we can say the Oath

We all stood up, I placed my Oath in front of me..

Dean: Please read

We started reading, each read their name.

Me: "I Aisha Sontozile Ngwenya, herewith solemnly declare that:

Above all else my first consideration will be the well-being of my Patients. Irrespective of Race, Gender, Religious and Political Persuasion, affiliations, etc.

I will exercise my profession to the best of my

knowledge and ability for the safety and welfare of my patients and for the health and well-being of the community.

I will actively guard against all human rights abuses.

I will strive for good relationships with my patients based on respect, communication and trust.

I will not improperly divulge any patients confidence.

I will give my patients complete information about their treatment possibilities and maintain the value of informed consent.

I will consult with or refer to my colleagues when necessary.

I will constantly maintain and improve my professional skills.

I will promote ethical standards in community engagement including research, education, training and service.

I will always uphold the good name and traditions of my university and promote its welfare.

I make these promises solemnly: freely and upon my honour"

Everyone gave us a stand up ovation. Parents and relatives were proud, this moment mattered more than anything. This is what I came here for, this is what I was striving for.. For 3 years. When I was at it with Virgo, it all seemed impossible. I wanted to quit, I didn't wanna go on anymore but here I am now. I made it. Made myself and my family proud..

We walked out of the lecture hall, I was holding the university envelope cover with my Oath and declaration inside, also a document about the graduation ceremony.. Outside at the entrance everyone was hugging someone, people were taking pictures..

Ma: I'm so proud of you

She hugged me..

Thobeka: Mom cried

Ma: As if like you didn't

Thobeka hugged me too..

Me: Thank you for being here

Ma: Come on

Thobeka: We should go out and take pictures

Me: Yes please

I saw J o standing and looking at us..

Me: I'll find you guys by the tree

They looked at him..

Thobeka: Ma let's go

Ma: A white boy, do they do lobola?

Me: Ma!! He's just a friend

Ma: Hmmmm we don't know

Thobeka held her hand and they walked to the tree,
J o walked up to me..

J o: Congratulations

He hugged me..

Me: Thank you

J o: You did it

Me: I did it

J o: Let me not keep you, I just wanted to

congratulate you

Me: Okay we'll talk later over the phone

J o: You look beautiful by the way

Me: Thank you

J o: Later then

Me: Later

I watched him walking away..

Thobeka: Aisha

I walked up to them, then I was stopped by some girl..

Her: Hi

Me: Hi

Her: Are you Aisha?

Me: Yes

Her: Here this is for you

I took the small envelope..

Her: Someone said I should give you

Me: Who?

Her: Said his name is Virgo, he was at the gate when I came in

I looked at her with my heart beating..

She walked away. I opened the envelope, it was a picture of a sonar scan picture. Not mine, definitely not mine. I read the name "Afrika Zwane" she was 8 months pregnant. I turned it around and it was written:

"Ours could've been 3

Congratulations though on your oath taking, 3 distinctions. You deserve them"

I put it back with my hands shaking. I checked around..

Thobeka: Aisha??

VIRGO

Afrika ran her hand on my hair as I was driving..

Afrika: I don't understand why I had to stay in the car for 2 hours?

Me: The hall was full didn't want people pushing you off, it's not safe

Afrika: So did your friend make it?

Me: Yes she made it

Afrika: And we making it soon

Yes I am going to be a father again, Afrika is 8 months pregnant with a baby girl..

I am no longer staying in Uitenhage. We moved

down here last month. Afrika had resigned and it's good that her family lives this side, she's from Gauteng just went that side to work.

I'm still not at school, still very much black listed even though the case has gone cold.

So Bomi suggested I come work for her so I can learn about her company since I'll be taking over after her. We staying with her both families approved. Bomi and Afrika get along well, and Afrika has made me a better man since Aisha. I don't wanna ruin this, I don't wanna ruin us..

AISHA

I didn't tell my Mother and sister, I just put the envelope in my bag. After taking pictures, we went to town to eat..

I was awfully quiet, my mind was far away.

Thobeka: What's wrong with you?

After that abortion incident, we promised each other that we'll never keep anything from each other. I took out the picture and showed them..

Thobeka: Ini? (what)

Me: He's back from whatever hell hole he was in

Ma: How did he get inside the school premises?

Me: I don't know but he's back

Thobeka: This is a mess

Ma: He won't hurt you, won't come after you. Plus, you leaving next month for work in pretoria I doubt he will find you

Thobeka: Pretoria is pretty big so long he doesn't know where you work

Ma: That's true and also don't post about it on

social media

Me: I won't

I took my phone and texted J o together with Ase.
Ase we'll be working this side too but here in
J ohannesburg at some surgery so we'll still see
each other..

"Virgo is back".

BOMI

Khosi: This one is adorable

I looked at the vest she was holding..

Me: Very

I'm so proud of my Son. Since his stay in EC he did

not have any scandals. Instead, he met a very lovely girl and they making me a Grandmother. I'm so happy he's taking responsibility because now he will be working for me to provide for his family..

Me: I'm so proud of him you know?

Khosi: He has grown, I didn't know all it had to take for him to grow up was a baby

Me: I seriously can't wait and her family is lovely

Khosi: Very lovely

Me: And they must know we will be paying for damages, this baby is a Swartbooi

We heard the monitor go off..

Khosi: I'll go check

We have put all the baby clothes we bought this morning on the couch. I was madly in love with the small Tutu skirt..

Khosi came back with two officers..

Khosi: Bomi

I looked at them..

Me: What is it? Is my Son and his girlfriend okay?

Officer 1: Are you Bomi Swartbooi?

Me: Yes

He took out his handcuffs..

Officer 1: Bomi Swartbooi you are under arrested for ochastrating the murder of Koketso, and for bribing a police officer to destroy an important case file against your son

Me: What?

Officer: Your hitman Ace confessed when we arrested him and he provided proof, texts you two been sending back and forth, recorded phone calls he kept it all as insurance. He didn't wanna go down alone. The officer you bribed, he was arrested for tempering with evidence and upon investigation you was one of the people who asked him for favours and bribed him he also confessed..

Khosi fainted right there, I heard keys dropping to the floor..

Afrika: Ohh my God!!

I looked at Virgo standing there, he had dropped the keys. He looked at me shaking his head with tears in his eyes..

Me: Baby I'm sorry

The officer cuffed me..

Me: I'll make this go away

Officer 1: Not this time around, you going straight to hell!!

He ushered me out..

Me: Virgo I'm sorry!!

He walked me out, the gate was wide open. Media personnels were there..

J ourno: Bomi.. Bomi.. Is it true that you ochastrated the murder of a young innocent girl? What for?

Me: Who called them?

Officer 1: I did, because people like you make me sick!! Thinking money can bail you out from everything! And I'll make sure you never see daylight again!

Me: Who are you?

Officer: One official you can't bribe, I clean up and put people like you away.. They know me as the cleaner "Detective King Nkambule" never forget that name because I'm the detective who brought you down! Ohh and the case assault case against your Son, will be re-opened too. So long the video still exists evidence never rots!

Me: Not my son please!! He had nothing to do with this!! Please not my Son he's about to be a father!!

They took pictures of me being put at the back of the police car. He shut the door, I buried my head in my cuffed hands..

Me: Ohh my God what did I do?

.

..... THE END.....